



Gc  
929.2  
Su877b  
1243880

M.L.

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01429 9058











18

# Historical Account

O F

*Thomas Sutton Esq;*

And of His

## FOUNDATION

I N

## CHARTER-HOUSE.

---

By PHILIP BEARCROFT D. D.  
Preacher at *Charter-House*.

---

Μακρίον ἐστὶ διδόναι μᾶλλον ἢ λαμβάνειν.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed by E. OWEN, and Sold by F. GYLES  
in *Holborn*; W. HINCHLIFFE in *Cornhill*;  
Mess. J. and P. KNAPTON in *Ludgate-street*;  
J. STAGG in *Westminster-Hall*; and S. BIRT  
in *Ave-Mary-Lane*. 1737.



*The* DEDICATION.

1243880

T O

*The Most Reverend Father in God*  
JOHN Lord Archbishop of  
CANTERBURY.

*The Right Honorable* PHILIP  
Lord HARDWICKE, Lord  
High Chancellor of GREAT-  
BRITAIN.

*The Right Honorable* SPENCER  
Earl of WILMINGTON,  
Lord President of the Council.

*His Grace* WILLIAM Duke of  
DEVONSHIRE, Lord Steward.

*His Grace* CHARLES Duke of  
GRAFTON, Lord Chamberlain.

*His Grace* CHARLES Duke of  
SOMERSET.

*His Grace* THOMAS Duke of  
NEWCASTLE.

*His Grace* JAMES Duke of  
CHANDOS.

iv *The* DEDICATION.

*His Grace* LIONEL *Duke of*  
DORSET.

*The Right Honorable* RICHARD  
*Earl of* SCARBROUGH.

*The Right Honorable* WILLIAM  
*Earl of* DARTMOUTH.

*The Right Honorable* CHARLES  
*Viscount* TOWNSHEND.

*The Right Reverend Father in God*  
EDMUND *Lord Bishop of*  
LONDON.

*The Right Honorable* WILLIAM  
*Lord* HARRINGTON.

*The Right Honorable* Sir RO-  
BERT WALPOLE.

*The Reverend* JOHN KING D. D.

*The GOVERNORS of the Hospital of King*  
*James founded in Charter-House in the*  
*County of Middlesex, at the humble Pe-*  
*tition and only Costs and Charges of*  
THOMAS SUTTON *Esquire.*



*May it please your Lordships,*



O receive favourably this very humble Tender of my Duty to your LORDSHIPS, and of my Regard to the Memory of that most worthy GENTLEMAN, whose Great FOUNDATION you Honor with your *Protection*, and make to flourish by your *Care*.

It is our *Peculiar Distinction* among the many Noble Endowments of Charity and Learning within this Realm, to have been governed always by the Chief Personages of the State. The King on the Throne at the FOUNDATION Dignified us with HIS NAME, and conferred many valuable *Privileges* and *Immunities* upon us; and His Ministers undertook most willingly the Trouble of OUR ESTABLISHMENT, to the great Honor of our Religion, and to the no small

# *The* DEDICATION.

Benefit of our Land. Your LORDSHIPS are the Successors in a regular Descent of those GREAT MEN in the Government of this HOSPITAL to our Private, and in the Government of the KINGDOM to the PUBLICK GOOD under our most GRACIOUS SOVEREIGN, who, when Prince of WALES, condescended to become One of our Sixteen Governors, and is now the most HONORED PATRON of *Charter-House*.

There was a Wish expressed in an Assembly of your LORDSHIPS, that there were an authentick Account of the HOSPITAL, and of the Rules and Orders thereof, drawn up for general Use: And I presumed to acquaint your LORDSHIPS, that I had had some Thoughts of the Attempt, which you were pleased to approve of, and to order me the Inspection of the Records, and other Papers of the Hospital by the following Minute of *June 24, 1735*.

We

We do order, *That Dr. Bearcroft, Preacher to this Hospital, may have Liberty to peruse any of our Books, and Writings in the Custody of our Register, or elsewhere, for his Assistance in compiling an History of the Hospital.*

Thus Honored and Encouraged, I set immediately to work, and read over carefully the Register, and other Records of the House; and soon discovered, there were many Rules and Orders, about which I ought to consult your Lordships, and to receive your particular Directions, before I published the Collection in Print. These Sheets therefore are rather a Specimen than a full Performance of my Task; they contain all the Particulars worthy of Notice, which I could gather up upon good Authority concerning Mr. SUTTON, (whose NAME, were it only for the rich Gift of THIS GREAT HOSPITAL, ought

*The* DEDICATION.

*to be had in everlasting Remembrance)* and an authentick Account of the FOUNDATION to the compleat ESTABLISHMENT in 1614.

The Fate of the HOSPITAL from that Time to this, and the Rules and Orders concerning it, shall follow, if I may be so happy, as to have proceeded thus far to your LORDSHIPS Satisfaction, and to be thought worthy to receive your further COMMANDS.

There is, I am sure, a most willing Mind, and I humbly hope it may be accepted accordingly from

MY LORDS,

*Your most Faithful and*


*most Obedient Servant*

PHILIP BEARCROFT.



T H E

## P R E F A C E.

 *Y* original Design was most truly the same with that of Mr. Samuel Herne in his *Domus Carthusiana*, published in 1677, to give an honest Instance of my Duty and Thankfulness to that Good Man, to whom both of us, and Thousands of others owe more than we shall be ever able to express : And indeed at first I proposed nothing more, than to give a new Edition of Mr. Herne's Book with the necessary Additions to bring the Account down to the present Time.

But upon a careful Perusal of that Book, it seemed somewhat confused, as Mr. Herne in his Preface ingenuously acknowledgeth, it is : and after a strict Examination, there appeared but too good Reason to affirm of Mr. Herne's, what he very truly says of Sir Richard Baker's, Dr. Heylin's, Dr. Fuller's, and other Accounts of Mr. Sutton, it is full of Mistakes.

The first Mistake, which startled me, is a manifest Anachronism, when he gives for a Proof of Mr. Sutton's having been in Italy in his Youth, that he was at the sacking of Rome under the Duke of Bourbon, meaning that Sack by the Imperialists under the Prince of Orange, the Duke of Bourbon

Dom.  
Car-  
thus.  
p. 39.

*Ibid.*  
*P-37.* bon being slain, in 1527, four Years before Mr. Sutton was born, according to Mr. Herne's own Account; for he dates his Birth in 1531.

*P-38.* Nor is he more exact in Mr. Sutton's Father's and Mother's Christian Names, calling them Edward and Jane, whereas it is evident from the Father's Will, his Name was Richard, and his Wife's Elizabeth.

*P-52.* A Third great Error is his making Mr. Sutton to have married the Lady Popham, and so enjoyed the Wealth of the Great Rich Popham; for had he consulted the Herald's Office, that would soon have informed him, that it was the Widow of John Dudley of Newington, Esq; whom Mr. Sutton married, and not the Widow of the Great Rich Popham, who was alive, and Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench above Twenty Years after Mr. Sutton's Marriage. Mr. Sutton, it is true, married his Wife's Daughter by Mr. Dudley to Lord Chief Justice Popham's Eldest Son, and this, it is probable, gave Rise to this egregious Mistake.

Upon these and other palpable Errors, unwilling to find Fault, where the Undertaking in general was laudable; and fearful, lest mine might be added one Day to the false Accounts of Mr. Sutton, I laid aside my Design; till the Intimation from the Board of Governors, that something of that Nature would be acceptable, induced me to take it up again, with a Resolution to spare neither Pains nor Expence, but to search all the publick Offices, Records, and Libraries for proper Materials.

*Materials for the Work ; with what Success is humbly submitted to the Reader ; the Authorities are given for what is advanced.*

*But there is one of the very many Particulars, in which I differ from Mr. Herne, for which it may be more especially proper to give my Reasons, viz. For making Mr. Sutton to have been of St. John's College in Cambridge, to which he doth not appear a Benefactor, rather than of Magdalene, and of Jesus Colleges in that University, both which he generously remembers in his Last Will, and according to Mr. Herne, had been a Member of.*

*Upon consulting the very learned and generously communicative Mr. Baker of St. John's College in Cambridge, for the Date of Mr. Sutton's Matriculation in the University, he wrote thus :*

*' I have turned our Matriculation Book very carefully from the Year 1544, where it first begins, to the Year 1551, and cannot meet with your Founder Thomas Sutton either at Magdalene or Jesus College, or indeed at any College, except St. John's, where I find Thomas Sutton matriculated Nov. 27, 1551, thus ; Thomas Sutton Col. Joh. Quadrantarius (Census) Nov. 27. 1551. The Time agrees pretty nearly with his Age, for he might have been admitted a Year or two sooner ; they are not always matriculated the first Year. But Quadrantarius is a greater Objection, which suits not well with his Birth and Quality, and yet we have had Gentlemen*  
ad-

‘mitted Sizars. I should be glad to have had the  
 ‘Honor of his Admission in this College, but I  
 ‘give you the Objections, and leave them to your  
 ‘better Consideration, if he were not of this Col-  
 ‘lege, he is none of ours, nor of this University.

‘Of *Magdalene* College he could hardly be, for  
 ‘though they were founded under *Henry VIII.* yet  
 ‘for many Years after they were an unsettled, and  
 ‘imperfect Foundation, few Fellows, and very few  
 ‘Scholars. When *Q. Elizabeth* was at *Cambridge*,  
 ‘*Anno* 1564, and all Colleges by Order gave in the  
 ‘Names of their Fellows and Scholars, *Magdalene*  
 ‘College returns none. And yet later, in an origi-  
 ‘nal Letter from *Deg. Nycolls*, Master to Lord  
 ‘*Burghley* (endorsed *Jul. 20, 1580,*) he complains,  
 ‘the Number of Fellows to be but few, and the  
 ‘Number of Scholarships to be none (for indeed  
 ‘we have but one Scholarship) *viz.* of the House,  
 ‘or Foundation.

‘This is confirmed by the *Matric.* where they  
 ‘have seldom ten admitted Scholars. After this  
 ‘Year 1580 they were greatly augmented by private  
 ‘Foundations, and became in a Manner a *Lincoln-*  
 ‘*shire* College, which might determine your Foun-  
 ‘der’s Charity to that College.

‘For *Jesus* College I can say little, unless it be,  
 ‘that of that College the Bishop of *Ely* (sometime  
 ‘*Cox*) being looked upon as Founder, that might  
 ‘determine your Founder to his Patron’s College.

*Upon this Information I wrote to Dr. Asheton,*  
*the very worthy Master of Jesus College, giving him*  
*an*



*an Account of Mr. Baker's Letter, and the Master returned in Answer,*

‘ I wish I could give you a satisfactory Answer to  
 ‘ your Enquiry concerning Mr. *Sutton* ; but tho’ I  
 ‘ have often searched for my own Satisfaction in that  
 ‘ Matter, I could never find any certain Proof, that  
 ‘ he was of this College, or any thing more relating  
 ‘ to him, than what is contained in Mr *Baker's* Tran-  
 ‘ script from Dr. *Sherman's* History of the College.  
 ‘ The Impropriation of *Elmstead* was purchased in  
 ‘ the Year 1613. with the Money given by Mr. *Sut-*  
 ‘ *ton*, and the Tradition hath thereupon run, that he  
 ‘ was formerly of the College ; but I observe, that  
 ‘ Dr. *Sherman*, who was Fellow within 40 Years af-  
 ‘ ter Mr. *Sutton's* Death, and spent some Years in  
 ‘ searching into these Matters, doth not say of Mr.  
 ‘ *Sutton*, that he was *hujus Collegii Alumnus*, by  
 ‘ which Phrase he constantly distinguisheth Benefac-  
 ‘ tors, that were of the College from those, that were  
 ‘ not ; so that after all his Search it was at least a mat-  
 ‘ ter of Doubt with him ; and the Reason of Doubt  
 ‘ was, that he could not find any Entry of his Name  
 ‘ in the College Books ; for indeed there doth not  
 ‘ appear any regular Entry of Admissions made, nor  
 ‘ a Register duely kept till the Year 1618.

*I consulted likewise Magdalene College, and re-*  
*ceived an Answer to the same Purpose ;* ‘ The Re-  
 ‘ gister of Admissions goes not so far back as the  
 ‘ Time when Mr. *Sutton* must have been admitted  
 ‘ into our College, if he was here at all ; so that  
 ‘ I can give you no Satisfaction in that Point.

The

*The most authentick Account of Mr. Sutton, that I have met with, is this Character of him in a Commemoration Sermon.*

‘ A Gentleman of ancient Descent, of liberal Education, a Man rich in Arts, and famous in Arms ; for the former he was so far advanced in good Letters, that he appeared the most compleat Man of his Times for discharging the Office of a learned, wise, and able Secretary to the most Honorable Peers of this Nation ; *and what Ability he had sucked from the University in Speculation*, he did with Credit practice under Famous *Warwick* and Great *Leicester*. These were the first Paths to *Sutton’s* Greatness, and our Happiness : For his other Honors from Arms, if you observe the Time of our Centurion’s Employment in the Field, you may know, there was a Time, when foreign Religion was the Patronesse of domestick Rebellion ; when two Northern, and superstitious Earles durst display the *Romish* Ensign against Invincible *Elizabeth* : Then, then was this Son of *Pallas* advanced to the Command of the Ordnance, and gave an happy *Probatum* of his Loyalty, Valour, and Wisdom ; here I suppose he learned, and resolved to cherish Military Men ; but you will enquire from what Myne his infinite Treasures did arise : I can informe you, from prosperous merchandizing, from the great Farme of all the Mynes about *Newcastle*, and from the Wisdom of his vertuous Frugality : of his Person I will conclude in the Words of *Pammachius*, framed by St. *Jerome* : *Sutton* was

Gen-

‘ Gentyle by Birth, High by Humility, and which  
‘ is greatest Honor, Rich by Charitable Bounty.”

*I have given this Character of Mr. Sutton thus at large, because the Sermon is very scarce, and no where, that I know of, to be met with in publick, except in the Bodleian Library : It is intituled, Sutton’s Synagogue, or, The English Centurion : Shewing the unparalleled Bounty of Protestant Charity ; and was printed in 1629, with a Dedication to the Governors by Percival Burrel, A. M. then Preacher at Charter-house.*

*Four of the original Governors of the Hospital were then living, Archbishop Abbot, Lord Chief Justice Coke, Mr. Brown, and Sir Richard Sutton, the Founder’s near Kinsman, and one of his Executors, whom Mr. Burrel, from these Words in his Sermon, I have it from Honorable Authority now living, seems to have consulted particularly, and had consequently good Authority for what he said ; and Mr. Sutton therefore was a Member of the University ; not of Oxford, that was never pretended, nor would the diligent, and laborious Anthony à Wood then have omitted him among the Great Men there : But the Register of Cambridge giveth us the Admission of Thomas Sutton of St. John’s College, at the proper Season for our Founder’s Matriculation in the University ; and I have therefore placed him here.*

*It may probably be observed, I do not mention Mr. Sutton’s having been a Freeman of London, and of the Girdler’s Company, as ’tis said by Mr. Herne :*

Herne : *The Reason is, because after a proper Enquiry, I can find no Traces of it.*

*But in my Searches, I have met with some Particulars worthy of Notice concerning the Old Foundation in Charter-house; and I have laid them together in a distinct Chapter by themselves; and some other curious Things are thrown into the Appendix.*

*It may likewise be observed, that speaking of the Hospital, I stile it generally Charter-house, and not The Charter-house; as it is now commonly called, it is, because the Title by Act of Parliament is, The Hospital of King James founded in Charter-house, within the County of Middlesex, at the humble Petition, and only Costs and Charges of Thomas Sutton, Esq; and I thought it became me to be exact, and not to offend; though warranted by Custom; against a written Law; but should Custom yet prevail, it will be just the same Thing to me.*

*I must beg Leave to conclude with my most hearty Thanks for all the kind Assistancess I have met with, and I hope each Gentleman will accept them, as if he were particularly named.*



A N

Historical ACCOUNT

O F

*Thomas Sutton Esq;*

A N D

OF His FOUNDATION in  
*Charter-House.*

---

C H A P. I.



*HOMAS SUTTON* Esq; Mr. Sutton born a Gent.

whose noble Foundation in *Charter-House* is the chief Subject of the following Sheets, was born a Gentleman, of that antient Family of the *Suttons* in *Lincolnshire*, which bears Or, on a *Cheveron* between three *Annulets* *Gules*, as many *Crescents*, Or.

## An Historical Account

Herald's  
Office.  
*Camden's*  
Funeral  
Certifi-  
cates.

Register  
of the Ci-  
ty of *Lin-*  
*coln*, 1558.

These are the Arms assigned by Mr. *Camden* to Mr. SUTTON from his Father RICHARD SUTTON, of the Parish of St. *Swithin* in the City of *Lincoln* Gentleman, Steward of the Courts to the City of *Lincoln*, and therefore, it is presumed, of the Profession of the Common Law.

His Mother was *Elizabeth*, a Daughter of the Honourable Family of the *Stapletons* in *Yorkshire*, whose Lineal Ancestor was Sir *Bryan Stapleton* of *Carleton*, Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter in the Time of *Richard* the Second; and to go yet higher up, Sir *Miles Stapleton* One of the Founders of that most Noble Order was of this Family; and from the same Stemm is descended Sir *Miles Stapleton* Baronet, One of the Knights of the Shire in the present Parliament for the County of *York*.

Charter-  
House Evi-  
dence-  
House

Mr. *Sutton's* Legacy of an 100 Marks to his Cousin *William* Son of Sir *Richard Stapleton*, and Letters of the Widow of this Sir *Richard* dated from *Carleton* sufficiently prove this Relation.

But notwithstanding this Genteel Descent, there remain few Notices of Mr. *Sutton* in his younger Years, in-somuch that we are beholden to his Age at his Death, 79 Years in 1611, which by Substraction give 1532,  
for

for the Year of his Birth at *Knaith* in *Lincolnshire*; the Month and Day are unknown, all the written Memorials being long since gone, if there were any; for as to Parish Registers, they were first generally enjoined by *Vice-gerent Cromwell's* Injunctions in 1538.

Monum.  
Inscript.

*Burnet's*  
Hist. Re-  
form.  
1538.

The Tradition runs, that His Father sent him to *Eaton School* by the Advice, and Direction of Dr. Cox, Præceptor to King *Edward* the Sixth, and not long before chief School-master there: The true Reason, it may be, that the first Legacy in Mr. *Sutton's* Will is to the Children of Doctor Cox: his honest Heart reminding him, to begin his last Acknowledgements, where his first Obligations were received; and when he was about to die a Good and Glorious Protestant, in the first Place to express his Thankfulness to the Memory of that worthy Bishop, who was the first Happy Means of His Instruction in the true Protestant Religion.

Dom.  
Carthus.  
p. 38.  
Mr. Sutton put to  
*Eaton-School.*

Mr. *Sutton*, who for Reasons given in the Preface appears to be the *Thomas Sutton* of *St. John's College* in *Cambridge*—matriculated on the 27th of *November*, 1551. seems not to have resided long, and it is certain, took no Degree in the University: In all Probability he quitted it on the Ac-

Mr. Sutton a Student at  
*Cambridge*

cession of Queen *Mary* to the Crown in  
1553.

At *Lin-*  
*coln's-Inn.*  
*Stow's An-*  
*nals by*  
*Hovvs, p.*  
940.  
*Mr. Sut-*  
*ton Tra-*  
*vels*  
*Abroad.*  
*Dom.*  
*Carthuf.*  
p. 39.

He came up to *London*, and entred him-  
self a Student of *Lincoln's-Inn*; but his Ge-  
nius leading him to an Active, rather than  
a Sedentary Life, he soon after went Abroad,  
and travelled during the Continuance of  
that gloomy Reign.

Register  
of the Bi-  
shoprick  
of *Lincoln.*

*Mr. Sutton* is said to have gone into  
*Holland, France, Spain, and Italy*, and it  
is a reasonable Conclusion, that he was  
abroad in the last Year of that Queen, 1558;  
because his Father dying at *Lincoln* on the  
27th of *July* that Year, left his Wife and  
Son, *Mr. Sutton*, joint Executors of his last  
Will: And this Will was not proved, 'till  
the 22d of *February* 1562, when the Ex-  
ecution of it was granted to *Mr. Sutton*  
alone, his good Mother trusting all to his  
Management, and waiting thus long for  
his Return Home.

Returns  
Home.

The Will was Nuncupative, and as it  
stands reduced into Writing, it is very short,  
bequeathing his Soul to Almighty God his  
Saviour and Redeemer, and his Body to  
the Ground: His Lease of *Cockrington* to  
his Son *Thomas*, and the Residue of his  
Goods to his Wife *Elizabeth*, and his said  
Son *Thomas*, making them his Executors,  
without



without any Mention of Masses for his Soul, seldom omitted in those Popish Times ; and therefore he was probably a secret Protestant, and not through Neglect, but on prudent Considerations made his Will Nuncupative, which is to be seen in Form in the *Appendix*.

This Lease of *Cockrington* was holden of the Bishoprick of *Lincoln*, and of a very considerable Value ; and this with his Share in the remaining Personal Estate, was the Patrimony Mr. *Sutton* received from his Father.

When now about 30 Years of Age, a Master of Languages, polished by his Travels, and according to the most approved Methods of Education a compleat Gentleman, he was first retained by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and after some Time spent with his Grace, was made Secretary to the Earl of *Warwick*, and occasionally to the Earl of *Leicester* his Brother ; and to this early Relation to the Duke of *Norfolk*, if I am not mistaken, is in a great Measure owing Mr. *Sutton's* Legacy of 400 *l.* and of the Mannors of *Littlebury* and *Hadstock* in *Essex*, to the Earl of *Suffolk* his Grace's Son, on the Payment of 10,000 *l.* and not barely to the Earl of *Suffolk's* selling Mr.

1562.  
Mr. Sutton retained by the Duke of Norfolk, Heroologia Anglica, p. 128. Made Secretary to the Earl of Warwick.

## *An Historical Account*

*Sutton, Charter-House* for 13,000 *l.* which Mr. *Sutton* well knew from the Title Deeds cost his Lordship's Father of Lord *North*, only 2500 *l.*

There appears a Grant on the 12<sup>th</sup> of *November*, 1569, of an Annuity of 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* out of the Mannor of *Walkington* in *Yorkshire*, from *Ambrose* Earl of *Warwick*, and Dame *Ann* his Wife, to their well beloved Servant *Thomas Sutton* for Life; and they afterwards leased the whole Mannor to him for 21 Years, at the Rent of 26 *l.* per Annum.

*Charter-house.  
Evidence-house.*

*Heroologia Anglica, p. 128.*  
Mr. *Sutton* made Master of the Ordnance at *Berwick*.

Not long before, the Earl of *Warwick*, as Master General of the Ordnance, had made Mr. *Sutton* Master of the Ordnance at *Berwick*, a Frontier Garrison to *Scotland* then in great Confusion through intestine Broils; and upon the breaking out of the Rebellion in the North, by the Earls of *Northumberland*, and of *Westmoreland*, upon Account of the Romish Religion, and of the Queen of *Scots*, Mr. *Sutton* distinguishing his Loyalty Valour and Wisdom, in those troublesome Times was further advanced by the Recommendations of the same Noble Patron, and of the Earl of *Leicester* his Brother, to the Honorable Post of Master General of the Ordnance in  
the

*Burrel's Commem. Sermon. p. 22.*

the North for Life. The Patent bears Date <sup>6ta pars. Pat. 12mo. Eliz.</sup> the 28th of *February*, 1569. and may be seen in the Appendix.

Mr. *Sutton's* Post of Master General of the Ordnance in the North seems to have required his accompanying the Earl of *Sussex* President of the North, on his Lordship's marching into *Scotland* with an Army in 1570, but there is no express mention of him. <sup>*Camden's Annals Eliz. 1570*</sup>

But in the Year 1573 Mr. *Sutton* is named, as one of the Chief of those 1500 Men, who marched into *Scotland* to the Assistance of the Regent the Earl of *Morton* by Order of Queen *Elizabeth*, and laid Siege to *Edinburgh Castle*; when five Batteries being raised against it, Mr. *Sutton* commanded one, and that very strong Castle was quickly obliged to Surrender, to the great Honour of the *English* Forces, and of the Master General of the Ordnance in the North. <sup>*Ibid. 1573 Stow's Annals, 1573. Churchyard's Poems.*</sup> <sup>A Commander at the Siege of *Edinburgh Castle*.</sup>

And how well Mr. *Sutton* filled his Post in Garrison, let Mr. *Camden* inform us, whose Account of *Berwick*, from his own Survey, during Mr. *Sutton's* Master Generalship of the Ordnance in the North, is this. "The Kings of *England* have several times fortified it with new Works; but especially Queen *Elizabeth*, who lately to the Ter-

*Camden's  
Brit.  
Northum-  
berland.*

“ror of the Enemy, and the Security of  
“the Burghers, hath drawn it into a less  
“Compass than before, and surrounded it  
“with a firm Wall of Asler Work; which  
“is again strengthened with a deep Ditch,  
“Bastions, and Counterscarp, so that its  
“Fortifications are so strong and regular,  
“that no Besiegers can hope to carry it  
“hereafter, not to mention the Valour of  
“the Inhabitants, and *the surprizing Plen-*  
“*ty of all Warlike Stores*”. Wherever  
Mr. *Sutton's* Eye and Purse were concern-  
ed, there was Plenty; and they were of  
Service to his Sovereign in furnishing the  
Northern Garrisons; and to himself in the  
Conclusion by an ample Recompence from  
the Crown.

*4ta. pars.  
Pat. 12mo  
Eliz.*

But it was the Lease of the Mannors of  
*Gateshead* and *Wickham*, Famous for Coal-  
Mines, in the Bishoprick of *Durham*, and  
in the Neighbourhood of *Newcastle* upon  
Tine, which made Mr. *Sutton* Rich; he  
held them first from the Bishop of *Durham*,  
and afterwards from the Crown, for the  
Term of 79 Years; and prospered so fast,  
that on his coming up to *London* in  
the Year 1580, he brought with him the  
Quantity of two Horse-loads of Money,  
and was reputed worth 50000 *l.* as his Ser-  
vant

vant *John Thompson* after Mr. Sutton's Death, deposed in Chancery.

Causa  
Francisa  
Popham,  
et Execut.  
Thomæ  
Sutton.

About the middle of the Year 1582, Mr. Sutton married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of

*John Gardiner* of *Grove Place* in the Parish of *Chalfont St. Giles* in *Buckingham-*

Ibid.  
Hosp.  
Evid. H.

*shire*, and Widow of *John Dudley* of *Stoke-Newington* in *Middlesex*, Esq; a

Herald's  
Office  
Camden's

near Relation of the Earl of *Warwick*.

Fun. Cer-  
tificates.

Mr. *Dudley* on his Death in the Year 1580

Mr. Sut-  
ton Mar-

had left her Executrix, and Copartner in

ries.

his Fortunes with their Sole Child, a Daugh-

ter, and therefore she brought to Mr. *Sut-*

*ton* a very Considerable Estate: And among the rest, the Moiety of the Mannor of *Stoke-*

*Newington* in *Middlesex* upon Lease; the House of which being near *London* Mr.

*Sutton* made his Country Seat, and purchased at *London* a large House situate

Chart.  
Evid.  
House.

near *Broken Wharf*, in the Parish of St. *Mary Somerset*, the same which Mr. *Stow*

Stow by  
Strype.  
Vol. 1st.

in his Survey of *London* thus describeth;

“ By this *Broken-Wharf* remaineth one

p.3. p.217  
Settles in  
London.

“ large Building of Stone with arched

“ Gates, which Messuage I find in the 43d

“ Year of *Henry* the 11ld. pertaining to

“ *Hugh Bygot*, and in the 11th of *Ed-*

“ ward the 1ld. to *Thomas de Brotherton*

“ the King's Brother, Earl of *Norfolk*,

“ &c.

Becomes a  
Merchant.

Dom.  
Carthus.  
P. 50.  
Ibid. p.  
50.

Cotton  
Library  
*Julius F.*  
VI. 107.  
*Well-*  
*wood's*  
Memoirs  
p. 8.

*&c*". and here Mr. *Sutton* took up the peaceable Profession of a Merchant ; which his ready Money enabled him to follow with such great Credit, and so much to his Advantage, that he soon became one of the chief Merchants of *London*, and is said to have had no less than 30 Agents Abroad, and his Riches flowing in with every Tide.

Mr. *Sutton* was likewise one of the chief Victuallers of the Navy, by private Contract, no publick Office, nor Commissioners for that purpose being at that time established ; and I am inclined to believe the Bark *Sutton*, of 70 Tons, and 30 Men, in the List of Voluntiers attending the *English* Fleet against the Invincible *Spanish Armada* in the Memorable Year 1588. was His.

It is now a well known Truth, that Sir *Francis Walsingham*, upon Notice that the King of *Spain* had written a Letter to the Pope with an Account of the true Design of his mighty Preparations, and to beg his Blessing upon it, got a Copy of this Letter out of the Pope's Cabinet by the help of a Priest his Spy, and had thence the first certain Intelligence of the designed *Spanish* Invasion ; and that thereupon that consummate Statesman prevented it for a whole Year, by procuring our Merchants to gather up the

the chief Bills of the Bank of *Genoa*, and to draw the Money out of it, just as King *Philip* had ordered Bills upon that Bank to set his Fleet out to Sea, which being thro' Necessity protested, there was no Remedy but Patience, and to wait the Arrival of his Plate Fleet from the Indies for the necessary Supplies.

And in the mean time *England* prepared for the Reception of this invincible *Armada*, and attacked it on its Approach so vigorously, that it was soon put to flight, and only some shattered Remnants regained the Coast of *Spain*.

It is a current Tradition, that Sir *Thomas Gresham* was the chief Assistant in this Mercantile Affair, but it is most certainly a vulgar Error, for Sir *Thomas Gresham* Camden's Annals Eliz. 1579. died in 1579; but if Tradition will be allowed of any Force, it is strong at *Charter-House*, that it was Mr. *Sutton*, and there is this great Probability to support it, that he was at that Time the Chief and Richest Merchant in *London*.

The Lord *Charles Howard*, Brother to Mr. *Sutton's* first Lord the Duke of *Norfolk*, was High Admiral of *England*, and Mr. *Sutton* is said to have been a Commis- Dom. Carthus. p. 40. sioner for Prizes under him, and to have had

had Letters of Mart, and to have been so fortunate, as to have taken a *Spanish Ship* worth 20000 *l*.

In the Year 1590, Mr. *Sutton* married his Wife's Daughter by Mr. Dudley, to *Francis Popham* Esq; Son and Heir of Lord Chief Justice *Popham*, as appears from the Deeds of the Marriage Settlement in *Charter-House Evidence-House*.

Mr. *Sutton* begins to retire from business.

And now advancing in Years being himself without Issue, and past all Hopes of Children by Mrs. *Sutton* he grew sick of the great Multiplicity of his Affairs, and began seriously to reflect, that he walked in a vain Shadow, and disquieted himself in vain, while he heaped up Riches, and could not tell who should gather them; and therefore contracting his great Dealings, he brought them into so narrow a Compass, as permitted him to quit *London*, and to reside at one or other of his Country Seats, for he had purchased several good Estates.

*Stow* by *Strype*,  
Vol. 1st.  
B. 3d,  
p. 217.

It is plain, he had quitted the Lease of the large House at *Broken-Wharf* (which expired not 'till 1599.) in 1594, for *Stow* thus continueth the Description of it, within the Gate of this House, (now belonging to the City of *London*) lately, to wit, in the Years 1594, and 1595, is builded

one



one large House of great Height, called an Engine, made by *Bevis Bullmar*, Gentleman, for the conveying and forcing of *Thames* Water, to serve in the Middle and West Parts of the City.

*Stow's Survey,*  
Vol. 1st.  
B. p. 217.  
Surrenders up his Patent of Master General of the Ordnance in the North.  
in the North.  
6ta. Pars Pat. 1 2mo. Eliz.

And it is certain, Mr. *Sutton* surrendered up his Patent of Master-General of the Ordnance in the North for Life that same Year; for it appears cancelled in Chancery the 27th of *May*, 1594. and on the 20th of *June* following he by a Deed of Gift convey'd to Sir *John Popham* Lord Chief Justice of *England*, Sir *Thomas Eger-ton* Master of the Rolls, and to others in Trust, all his Mannors, Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments within the County of *Essex*, (with a Power of Revocation during Life) to found an Hospital at *Hallingbury Bouchers* in *Essex*. So long before his Death did this good Christian resolve to dedicate his Riches to the Glory of God.

*Chart. Evid. House.*

Makes a Deed of Gift for an Hospital.

And now approaching his Grand Climacterick Mr. *Sutton* made his Will on the 17th of *December* following, in which he makes a very large and ample Provision for Mrs. *Sutton*; and as a Proof of his trewe and faithfull Heart borne to His Dread Sovereign Queen ELIZABETH, he bequeatheth Her Two thousand Pounds, in

Makes his Will.

*Chart. Evid. House.*

*recompence of his oversights, carelesse dealinge, and forgetfullnesse in Her Service, most humbly beseeching Her to stand a Good and Gracious Lady to his poor Wife; who had the Honour to be well known to, and to have received Visits from the Queen in Mr. Dudley's her first Husband's Time, in one of which Her Majesty taking a Jewel of great Value from Her Hair made a Present of it to their Daughter Miss Ann Dudley. He gives likewise three thousand Pounds to build his intended Hospital, and Free School; and twenty Scholarships to Peter-House, and twenty Scholarships to Jesus College in Cambridge, of fifty Shillings per Annum each Scholarship, and ten Fellowships to each of them, of 5 l. per Annum each Fellowship; and as to the rest, much the same Legacies, as in his last Will.*

The Reason of Mr. Sutton's Favour to *Peter-House* in this Will was owing to his Friendship with Dr. *Perne*, Master of *Peter-House*, and Rector of *Balsbam*, the Mannor of which Mr. *Sutton* at that time held by a Lease from his Friend Bishop *Cox*; and tho' this Benefaction never took Place, yet from these Words of Dr. *Perne's* Will dated the 25th of *Feb.* 1588, Item, I give 20 l. towards building the East End of *Peter-House*,

*ter-House*, with a fair Gate in the Middle,  
 like unto *St. John's Gate-House*, with the  
 help of my Lord of *Canterbury*, (*Dr. Whit-*  
*gift*) *Mr. Smith*, *Mr. Sutton* of *Ashton*,  
*Sir Wulstan Dixie*, and *Sir Thomas Ram-*  
*saye*, *Mr. Sutton* appears to have been a  
 real Benefactor to *Peter-House*. For I find  
*Mr. Sutton* in Deeds about this Time stil-  
 ling himself of *Ashton*, and afterwards of  
*Balsbam*, and Lastly of *Castle-Camps*, af-  
 ter the Purchase of that noble Mannor,  
 “ which was the antient Seat of the *Veres*,  
 “ Earls of *Oxford*, held by *Hugh Vere*  
 “ (says the old Inquisition Record) that he  
 “ might be Chamberlain to the King. How-  
 “ ever it is most certain, that *Henry the Ist.*  
 “ granted this Office to *Aubry de Vere* in  
 “ these Words, Chief Chamberlain of *Eng-*  
 “ *land* in Fee, and Hereditary with all the  
 “ Powers, Priviledges, and Honours be-  
 “ longing thereto with as much Freedom  
 “ and Worship, as *Robert Mallet* held it”.

*Camden's*  
*Britan.*  
*Cam-*  
*bridgeshire*

Among other Good and Generous Acti-  
 ons of *Mr. Sutton*, this was none of the  
 least, to supply his poor industrious Neigh-  
 bours with Corn for their Families very  
 much under the Market Price; and that  
 more especially in dear Years; and there is  
 the following Note to his Steward, in *Mr.*

*Chart.*  
*Evid.*  
*House.*

*Sutton's*

*Sutton's* Hand-writing in 1595, when according to our Historians Grain bore an excessive Price, and Commotions arose upon it, now to be produced.

Corne to be sold to the labouring Poor of *Balsam*, now Barley at 2 s. 8 d. per Bushel, for 30 Weeks.

*John Symonds* by the Week half a Bushel, Six-pence,

And thus doth the good Man proceed through all his poor Neighbours to the Number of 49, allotting to each their Portion according to their Family wants.

May this worthy Example have its due Influence on the wealthy Reader on every proper Occasion!

We meet with nothing more remarkable concerning Mr. *Sutton*, 'till the Year 1602. When it pleased God to visit him with the Loss of Mrs. *Sutton* after a Marriage of twenty Years. There appears a Letter from her at *Balsam* of the 30th of May that Year, to Mr. *Sutton* at *London*, in which she complains of a violent Cold, and that she was never worse in her Life, and on the 17th of June following she died at *Balsam*; her Bowels were buried there, and the Corps embalm-  
ed,

Mrs. *Sutton* dies.  
*Chart.*  
*Evid.*  
*House.*

ed, and brought to their House at *Stoke-Newington* in *Middlesex*, and thence carried in an handsome Funeral Proceſſion to the Pariſh Church; Her Relations, and forty poor Women Houſekeepers in *Newington*, and *Hackney*, and ſixteen Servants all in Mourning attending; and deposited with her firſt Husband Mr. *Dudley* in a Vault, near which againſt the South Wall of the Church ſhe had raiſed a noble Marble Monument with the Images of Mr. *Dud-*  
*ley* in Armour, and of her ſelf, and behind her of her Daughter, all on their Knees, with Latin Epitaphs to be found in *Stow*. *Stow's Survey, by Strype, Vol. 2d. Circuit Walk. p.*

Mrs. *Sutton* appears to have been a very <sup>131.</sup> Diſcreet Charitable Good Woman, and much given to Hoſpitality, inſomuch that it is ſaid, while ſhe lived, Mr. *Sutton's*  
*House was an open Hoſpital*; and though *Burrel's Sermon p. 23.* we allow a Rhetorical flouriſh here, The following Letter will let us into her Character, and ſufficiently confirm what we have ſaid.

Good Mr. *Sutton*,

‘ I SEND you here incloſed a Letter  
 ‘ from *John Hutton*, which came by  
 ‘ the Carrier, and all is well at *Bal-*  
 ‘ *ſham*, I thank God: and here is ano-

C

“ ther

*Char.  
Evid.  
House.*

‘ ther Letter, which I opened before I  
 ‘ looked on the Superscription, which  
 ‘ came by another, it toucheth a Widow,  
 ‘ wherefore I need not to write to you  
 ‘ in her Behalf, for I know you have  
 ‘ great Care of the Poor for God’s Cause,  
 ‘ though she were a meer Stranger. I  
 ‘ send here a Note for Lenten Stores, if  
 ‘ you intend to stay here this Lent, you must  
 ‘ increase it for *Haberdeen* and *Lynge*;  
 ‘ and so praying God to bless us both, I  
 ‘ commit you to his keeping,

*Your Loving*

Newington, 27th  
 of Jan. 1600.

*Obedient Wife,*

Eliz. Sutton.

*Twenty Great Eeles.*

*Four Salmons Good, and Great.*

*A Barrel of Lowborne Herrings of the  
 bigger boyle.*

*Forty Stock Fish, Good, and ready beaten.*

*A Cade of Sprats, and a Cade of red Her-  
 rings, them that be Good.*

*Six Pounds of Figgs, and three Pounds  
 of Jordan Almonds.*

This

This was written to Mr. *Sutton* at *London*, and is one of the many Letters, which might be produced for Mrs. *Sutton's* good Nature, Charity, and Discretion, and therefore Mr. *Sutton* was very sensibly afflicted with her Death; and being full of Years grew quite sick of the World by the loss of his most valuable Jewel in it; and lessening his Family, and discharging a considerable Number of Servants he retired from it, and became Frugal, that he might be the more Magnificent to many.

*Burrel's*  
Serm. p.  
23.

“ This I can confidently affirm from the Mouth of one that heard it of a Credible Witness, who heard it himself, says Dr. *Fuller*, and told it me. Mr. *Sutton* used often to repair into a private Garden, where he poured forth his Prayers to God, and was frequently overheard to use this Expression, Lord thou hast given me a large, and liberal Estate, give me also an Heart to make use thereof.’ Not but long since he was resolved to be bountiful, and from the Year 1594, to the Act of Parliament for an Hospital in 1610, there was a Deed of Gift always Subsisting for one, but with a Power of Revocation; and his constant Reply to them, that asked him, how he would

*Fuller's*  
Worthies,  
*Lincoln-*  
*shire.*

*Chart*  
*Evid.*  
*House.*

dispose of his great Estate, was, that his Bread must be cast upon the Waters, alluding to the Directions about Charity given by the Wise Preacher in the xi. of *Ecclesiastes*; but he could not easily determine when, or how; he had various Projects of his own, and from his Friends, to ruminate on; and before he came to a fixed Resolution, he was greatly alarmed on the following Occasion.

Sir *John Harrington*, to make his Court the better to King *James*, told him, that Mr. *Sutton* had Thoughts of leaving his great Estate to the Duke of *York*, afterwards King *Charles* the First, and it might be proper to create Mr. *Sutton* a Baron, to fix him in that Mind: but as soon as this reached Mr. *Sutton*, he wrote the following Letter to the Lord Chancellor *Ellesmere*, and the Lord Treasurer *Salisbury*, both Feoffees for his intended Hospital.

*May it please your Lordships,*

*Chart.  
Evidence-  
House.*

‘ I Understand that his Majesty is possessed by Sir *John Harrington*, or by  
‘ some other by his means, that I intend  
‘ to make His Highness’s Son, the Duke of  
‘ *Torke*, my Heire; whereupon, as it is reported, His Highness proposeth to bestow  
‘ the



' the Honour of a Baron on me, whereof  
 ' as I am most unworthy, so I vowe to  
 ' God, and your Lordships, I never har-  
 ' boured the least thought, or proude de-  
 ' sire of any such Matter. My Mynde in  
 ' my younger Times hath been ever free  
 ' from Ambition, and now I am going to  
 ' my Grave, to gape for such a Thing,  
 ' were mere dotage in me, so unwor-  
 ' thie allso, as I confesse unto your Lord-  
 ' ships; that this Knight hath been often  
 ' tampering with me to that purpose, to  
 ' enterteyne Honour, and to make the  
 ' Noble Duke my Heire is true, to whom  
 ' I made that Answer, as had he either  
 ' Witte, or Honestie, (with Reverence to  
 ' your Lordships be it Spoken) he never  
 ' would have engaged himself in this Busi-  
 ' ness so egregiously to delude his Majesty,  
 ' and wrong me. My humble Suite unto  
 ' your Lordships is, that, considering this  
 ' Occasion hath brought me into Question,  
 ' and in Hazard of his Highness's Displea-  
 ' sure, having never given Sir *John Har-*  
 ' *rington*, nor any Man lyvinge, either pro-  
 ' mise, or semblance to do any such Act,  
 ' but upon his motions grew into utter  
 ' dislike with him for such idle Speeches,  
 ' Your Lordships will vouchsafe me this

*An Historical Account*

' Favour to informe His Highness aright,  
 ' howe things have proceeded directly with-  
 ' out my Privitie; and withall, that my  
 ' Trust is in His Gracious Disposition, not  
 ' to conceit the worste of me for other  
 ' Mens follies; but that I may have free  
 ' Liberty with his Princely Leave, wherein  
 ' I rest most assured, to dispose of myne  
 ' owne, as other his Majesties Loyal Sub-  
 ' jects. And so most humbly recom-  
 ' mending my Dutie, and Service to your  
 ' Lordships, for the increase of whose Ho-  
 ' nours, and Happines I shall ever pray.

*I rest*

*Your Lordships*

*poor Beadsman*

THOMAS SUTTON.

The Copy of this Letter in Mr. Sutton's  
 hand Writing without Date, is now in the  
 Hospital *Evidence-House*, but a Letter of  
 Sir *John Harrington* to Mr. Sutton, dated  
 the 13th of *June*, 1608, fixeth it about  
 that Time; and there being some Particu-  
 lars in that Letter, which may not be un-  
 acceptable

acceptable to the curious Reader, it follows at large.

SIR,

‘ **Y**OUR strange Message first by my  
 ‘ Man, after by my Son, now seconded with your Speech to myself, did  
 ‘ greatlie trouble me. That I have undone  
 ‘ you, overthrown your Estate, disturbed  
 ‘ your Designes, that no Man dare buy any  
 ‘ Land of you, be your Feoffee, nor  
 ‘ take any Trust from you, so as that,  
 ‘ which you had ordained to good Uses,  
 ‘ and to redeem your Sins, was now so  
 ‘ incombered, as you were skant Master of  
 ‘ your own, and all by means of a Bruit  
 ‘ among your Friendes, raised as you suppose by me, that you have made Duke  
 ‘ *Charles* your Heir, and the King your  
 ‘ Executor.

‘ Far be it from me to abuse, or mis-  
 ‘ report either so Princelie, and Pious an  
 ‘ Intention, as I know his Majestie hath  
 ‘ to further all good Works, or so Godlie  
 ‘ a Purpose, as you pretend to do some,  
 ‘ but God cannot be mocked, tho’ we may  
 ‘ dissemble with Men.

‘ The Letter is still Extant, which was  
‘ my Warrant, I have spoken nothing but  
‘ within Compass of that, and that very  
‘ sparinglie to your private Friends. In  
‘ which Letter seeing you yourself, would  
‘ needs in your sense read a Caveat to re-  
‘ fuse Honor, because of Age, which in my  
‘ Construction, was an encouragement to  
‘ take the Honor due to your Abilities,  
‘ and Years; I have been since, and will be  
‘ silent about it. For the Suite you would  
‘ make to his Majesty, which I will not so  
‘ much as guess at, I will say what I thinke,  
‘ you will make noe Suite, but such, as  
‘ will finde Favour and Expedition, and  
‘ seeing you suppose I wronged you before,  
‘ I would be glad to make you amends now  
‘ by any endeavor of mine. Onlie my old  
‘ Suite you may not forget to be a Bene-  
‘ factor to *Bath* Church in your Life time;  
‘ for Alms in ones Life is like a Light  
‘ borne before one, whereas Alms after  
‘ Death, is like a Candle carried behind  
‘ one. Do somewhat for this Church, you  
‘ promise to have seen it e’re this; when-  
‘ soever you will go to *Bathe*, my Lodg-  
‘ ings shall be at your Commandement,  
‘ the Baths would strengthen your Sinews,  
‘ the Alms would comfort your Soule.

‘ The

‘ The Tower, the Quayre, and two Isles  
‘ are already finisht by Mr. *Billet*, Execu-  
‘ tor to the worthie Lord Treasurer *Bur-*  
‘ *leigh*. The Walls are up ready for co-  
‘ vering.

‘ The Leade is promised by our Boun-  
‘ tifull Bishop Dr. *Montague*. Timber is  
‘ promised by the Earl of *Shrewsburie*, the  
‘ Earle of *Hartford*, the Lord *Say*, Mr.  
‘ *Robert Hopton*, and others.

‘ There lacks but Monie for Workman-  
‘ ship, which if you would give, you should  
‘ have many good Prayers in the Church  
‘ now in your Life time, when they may  
‘ indeed doe you Good, and when the  
‘ Time is to make Friends of the Mammon  
‘ of Iniquity as *Christ* bids us, that we may  
‘ be received into everlasting Tabernacles,  
‘ to which God send us, to whose Protec-  
‘ tion I leave you, &c.

From *Greenwich* this  
13th of *June*, 1608.

*John Harrington.*

Mr. *Sutton's* Letter to the Lord Chance-  
lor, and the Lord Treasurer, had the desired  
Effect; and he was permitted to remain a  
private Gentleman, with full Liberty to dis-  
pose

pose of his own; and not long after he received this excellent Letter from Mr. *Joseph Hall*, then of *Waltham* in *Essex*, a very worthy Divine afterwards Bishop of *Norwich*.

---

## C H A P. II.

*S I R,*

Bishop  
*Hall's*  
Works  
Decad. 5.  
Epist. 7.

‘ **I** Trouble you not with Reasons of  
 ‘ my Writing, or with Excuses: if I  
 ‘ do ill, no Plea can warrant me; if well,  
 ‘ I cannot be discouraged with any Cen-  
 ‘ sures. I crave not your Pardon, but your  
 ‘ Acceptation: It is no Presumption to give  
 ‘ good Counsel, and Presents of Love fear  
 ‘ not to be ill taken of Strangers: my  
 ‘ Pen and your Substance are both given  
 ‘ us for one End, to do good: these are  
 ‘ our Talents, how happy are we, if we  
 ‘ can improve them well! suffer me to do  
 ‘ you good with the one, that with the  
 ‘ other you may do good to many, and  
 ‘ most to your self: you cannot but know,  
 ‘ that your full Hand and worthy Purpo-  
 ‘ ses have possessed the World with much  
 ‘ Expectation: What speak I of the World!  
 ‘ whose Honest and reasonable Claims yet  
 ‘ cannot

cannot be contemned with Honour,  
nor disappointed without Dishonour.  
The God of Heaven who hath lent you  
this Abundance, and given you these gra-  
cious thoughts of Charity, of Piety, looks  
long for the Issue of both, and will easily  
complain of too little, or too late: your  
Wealth, and your Will are both good;  
but the first is only made good by the  
Second; for if your Hand were full, and  
your Heart empty, we, who now applaud  
you, should justly pity you: you might  
have Riches, not Goods, not Blessings;  
your Burden should be greater than your  
Estate, and you should be richer in Sor-  
row than in Metals. For (if we look to  
no other World) what gain is it to be  
Keeper of the best Earth? that which is  
the common Coffer of all the Rich Mines,  
we do but tread upon; and account it  
Vile, because it doth but hold and hide  
those Treasures: whereas the skilfullest  
Mettallist, that findeth and refineth those  
precious Veins for publick Use, is reward-  
ed, is honoured: the very basest Element  
yields Gold. The Savage *Indian* gets it,  
the Servile Apprentice Works it, the very  
Midianitish Camel may wear it; the mi-  
serable Worldling admires it, the cove-

' tous *Few* swallows it, the unthrifty Ruf-  
 ' fain spends it, what are all these the bet-  
 ' ter for it? only good use gives praise to  
 ' Earthly Possessions: herein therefore you  
 ' owe more to God, that *he hath given you*  
 ' *an Heart to do good: a will to be as rich*  
 ' *in good Works, as great in Riches*; to  
 ' be a Friend to this Mammon, is to be an  
 ' Enemy to God; but to make Friends  
 ' with it, is Royal and Christian: His Ene-  
 ' mies may be wealthy, none but his Friends  
 ' can either be good, or do good: *Da et*  
 ' *accipe*, saith the Wise Man.

' The Christian, who must imitate the  
 ' high Pattern of his Creator, knows his  
 ' best Riches to be Bounty. God, who  
 ' hath all, gives all; reserves nothing: and  
 ' for himself he well considers, that God  
 ' hath not made him an Owner, but a Ser-  
 ' vant; and a Servant of Servants not of  
 ' his Goods, but of the Giver: Not a Trea-  
 ' surer, but a Steward, whose praise is more  
 ' to have laid out well, than to have re-  
 ' ceived much: The greatest Gain therefore  
 ' that he affects, is an even Reckoning, a  
 ' clear Discharge: which since it is obtained  
 ' by disposing, not by keeping, he counts  
 ' Reservation Loss, and just Expence his  
 ' Trade, and Joy. He knows, that *well*  
 ' *done*



‘ *done faithful Servant*, is a thousand Times  
 ‘ more sweet a Note, than *Soul take thine*  
 ‘ *Ease*: for that is the Voice of the Master  
 ‘ recompencing; this of the Servant pre-  
 ‘ suming: and what follows to the One,  
 ‘ but his Master’s Joy? and what to the  
 ‘ other, but the Loss of his Soul? Blessed  
 ‘ be that God, *who hath given you an Heart*  
 ‘ *to forethink this, and in this dry and dead*  
 ‘ *Age a will to honour him with his own;*  
 ‘ *and to credit his Gospel with your Bene-*  
 ‘ *ficence. Lo! we are upbraided with barren-*  
 ‘ *ness: your name hath been publicly opposed*  
 ‘ *to these Challenges; as in whom it shall be*  
 ‘ *seen, that the Truth hath Friends that*  
 ‘ *can give*: I neither distrust nor persuade  
 ‘ you, whose Resolutions are happily fixed  
 ‘ on purposes of good; only give me leave  
 ‘ to hasten your Pace a little, and to excite  
 ‘ your christian Forwardness to begin speedi-  
 ‘ ly, what you have long, and constantly  
 ‘ vowed. You would not but do good, why  
 ‘ not now? I speak boldly, the more Speed,  
 ‘ the more Comfort: neither are the Times  
 ‘ in our Disposal, nor our selves.

‘ If God had set us a Day, and made  
 ‘ our Wealth inseparable, there were no  
 ‘ danger in delaying: now our uncertainty  
 ‘ either must quicken us, or may deceive

‘ us.

‘ us. How many have meant well, and  
‘ done nothing, and lost the Crown with  
‘ lingring? whose Destinies have prevented  
‘ their Desires; and have made their good  
‘ Motions the Wards of their Executors;  
‘ not without miserable Success: to whom,  
‘ that they would have done good, is not  
‘ so great a Praise, as it is Dishonour, that  
‘ they might have done it: their Wrecks  
‘ are our Warnings: we are equally mor-  
‘ tal, equally fickle. Why have you this  
‘ Respite of living, but to prevent the Im-  
‘ perious necessity of Death? It is a woful  
‘ and remediless Complaint, the End of our  
‘ Days hath over-run the Beginning of our  
‘ good Works: Early Beneficence hath no  
‘ Danger; many Joys: for the Conscience of  
‘ good done, the Prayers and Blessings of  
‘ the relieved, and the Gratulations of Saints,  
‘ are as so many perpetual Comforters,  
‘ which can make our Life pleasant, and  
‘ our Death happy; our evil Days good,  
‘ our good better: all these are but lost  
‘ with delay; few and cold are the Prayers  
‘ for him that may give: and in lieu, our  
‘ good Purposes foreflowed are become our  
‘ Tormentors: upon our Death-bed little  
‘ difference is betwixt good deferred, and  
‘ evil done: good was meant, who hin-  
‘ dred

'dred it? will our Conscience say: There  
 ' was Time enough, Means enough, Need  
 ' enough, what hindred? did fear of Envy,  
 ' distrust of Want? alas! what Buggs are  
 ' these to fright Men from Heaven? as  
 ' if the Envy of keeping were less than be-  
 ' flowing: as if God were not as good a  
 ' Debtor, as a Giver. *He that gives to*  
 ' *the Poor, lends to the Lord, says Solomon.*  
 ' If he freely give us, what we may lend,  
 ' and grace to give, will he not much more  
 ' pay us what we have lent? and give us,  
 ' because we have given? that is his Bounty,  
 ' this is his Justice: O happy is the Man  
 ' that may be a Creditor to his Master!  
 ' Heaven and Earth shall empty, before  
 ' he want a Royal Payment: if we dare  
 ' not trust God while we live, how dare we  
 ' trust Men when we are dead? Men, that  
 ' are still deceitful and light upon the Bal-  
 ' lance: light of Truth, and heavy of Self-  
 ' love; how many Executors have proved  
 ' the Executioners of honest Wills? how  
 ' many have our Eyes seen, that after most  
 ' careful choice of trusty Guardians, have  
 ' had their Children, and Goods so disposed,  
 ' as if the Parents Soul could return to see  
 ' it, I doubt whether it would be happy:  
 ' How rare is that Man, who prefers not  
 ' himself

‘ himself to his dead Friend, Profit to Truth?  
 ‘ who will take no Advantage of the Im-  
 ‘ possibility of the Account? Whatever  
 ‘ therefore Men either shew, or promise,  
 ‘ happy is that Man, that may be his own  
 ‘ Auditor, Supervisor, Executor: as you  
 ‘ love God and yourself, be not afraid of  
 ‘ being happy too soon.

‘ I am not worthy to give so bold Ad-  
 ‘ vice, let the wise Man of *Syrach* speak  
 ‘ for me; do good before thou die, and  
 ‘ according to thine Ability stretch out thine  
 ‘ Hand, and give: defraud not thy self of  
 ‘ thy good Day; and let not the Portion  
 ‘ of thy good Desires pass over thee: Shalt  
 ‘ thou not leave thy Travels to another,  
 ‘ and thy Labours to them, that will  
 ‘ divide thy Heritage? Or let a Wiser than  
 ‘ he speak, *viz. Solomon*: Say not, to mor-  
 ‘ row I will give, if thou now have it:  
 ‘ for thou knowest not what a Day will  
 ‘ bring forth. It hath been an old Rule  
 ‘ of Liberality, He gives twice, who gives  
 ‘ quickly: whereas slow Benefits argue un-  
 ‘ chearfulness, and lose their Worth: who  
 ‘ lingers his Receipts, is condemned as un-  
 ‘ thrifty: he who knoweth both, saith, *It is*  
 ‘ *better to give, than to receive*. If we are  
 ‘ of the same Spirit, why are we hasty in the  
 ‘ worst

‘ worst, and slack in the better? Suffer  
 ‘ you yourself, good Sir, for God’s Sake,  
 ‘ for the Gospel’s Sake, for the Church’s  
 ‘ Sake, for your Soul’s Sake, to be stirred  
 ‘ up by these poor Lines to a resolute and  
 ‘ speedy performing of your worthy Inten-  
 ‘ tions. And take this as a loving Invi-  
 ‘ tation sent from Heaven by an unworthy  
 ‘ Messenger: you cannot deliberate long of  
 ‘ fit Objects for your Beneficence, except it  
 ‘ be more for Multitude than want: the  
 ‘ Streets, yea, the World is full. How  
 ‘ doth *Lazarus* lie at every Door? How  
 ‘ many Sons of the Prophets in their mean-  
 ‘ ly provided Colledges may say, not *mors*  
 ‘ *in ollâ*, but Fames? how many Churches  
 ‘ may justly plead that which our Saviour  
 ‘ bad his Disciples, *The Lord hath need?*  
 ‘ and if this infinite Store hath made your  
 ‘ Choice doubtful, how easie were it to  
 ‘ shew you, wherein you might oblige the  
 ‘ whole Church of God to you? and make  
 ‘ your Memorial both eternal and blessed;  
 ‘ or if you had rather, the whole Common-  
 ‘ wealth?

‘ But now I find my self too bold and  
 ‘ too busy, in thus looking to particulari-  
 ‘ ties: God shall direct you, and if you fol-  
 ‘ low him, shall crown you. Howsoever,

‘ if good be done, and that betimes, he  
 ‘ hath what he desired, and your Soul shall  
 ‘ have more than you can desire. The  
 ‘ Success of my weak yet hearty Coun-  
 ‘ cel shall make me as Rich, as God hath  
 ‘ made you with all your Abundance.’

*God bless it to you, and make both  
 our Reckonings chearful in the Day  
 of our Common Audit.*

Mr. *Sutton* received this truly Christian Letter most kindly, and when he had well considered it, thinking he perceived the Finger of Heaven in it, he blessed God for the return of his Prayers in the Garden, and determined to quicken his Pace; and soon after, *viz.* on the tenth Day of *March*, 1609. he petitioned the King in Parliament, and obtained an Act of Parliament empowering him, by the Name of *Thomas Sutton* of *Balsbam* in the County of *Cambridge* Esq; to erect an Hospital at *Hallingbury Bouchers* in *Essex*: Which may be found in the Appendix.

This *Hallingbury Bouchers*, or little *Hallingbury* in *Essex*, is now Part of the *Hospital Possessions*, twenty-five Miles from *London*, and three from *Bishop-Stortfort*

*fort* on the Borders of *Hertfordshire*; from whence it is divided by the *Lesser Stowr*; a very pleasant and healthful Situation, where the Vigorous and Temperate usually live to a good old Age, and particularly Dr. *Fish* presented by Mr. *Sutton* to the Rectory of this Parish in the Year 1610, lived to have it put under Sequestration for Malignancy by the House of Commons in the Year 1644, and to enjoy it again on the Restoration, and died possessed of it in the Year 1669, in a good old Age; and among other Particulars relating to his worthy Benefactor, Dr. *Fish* used to talk of this to his dying Day, that he received the Presentation to that Rectory from Mr. *Sutton's* Hands with this Memorable and worthy Sentence: *What I desire in return is your Prayers, and the due Performance of your Office.*

*Dōmus  
Carthus.*

1243880

But not long after Mr. *Sutton* changed his Resolution as to the Situation of the Hospital, and purchased of the Earl of *Sussex* *Howard-House*, otherwise the late dissolved *Charter-House* near *Smithfield* in *Middlesex*, with the Orchards, Gardens, &c thereto belonging, for 13000 *l.* as may be seen in the Appendix; and there being then no Parliament, petitioned for, and

obtained of King *James*, Letters Patents with Licence of Mortmain bearing Date the 22d of *June* 1611, to found the Hospital intended at *Hallingbury* in *Charter-house*, by the Name of the Hospital of King *James*, founded in *Charter-house* in the County of *Middlesex*, at the humble Petition and only Costs and Charges of *Thomas Sutton* Esq; His Majesty vouchsafing to Honour the Hospital with his own Name, and the Great Men of the Kingdom most willingly accepting the Government thereof, as by the Letters Patents will appear more at large.





## C H A P. III.

*The Letters Patents.*

‘ JAMES by the Grace of God, King  
 ‘ of England, Scotland, France, and  
 ‘ Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To  
 ‘ all to whom these Presents shall come,  
 ‘ greeting. *Whereas* at the last Session of  
 ‘ Parliament last past, one Act was made  
 ‘ and passed, intituled, An Act to confirme  
 ‘ and enable the Erection and Establishment  
 ‘ of an Hospitall, a free Grammar School,  
 ‘ and Sundrye other Godly and Charitable  
 ‘ Acts and Uses done, and intended to be  
 ‘ done and performed by *Thomas Sutton*  
 ‘ Esquire (as by the same Act of Parliament  
 ‘ more at large it doth, and may appear.)  
 ‘ *And* whereas Sythence the said Act, the  
 ‘ said *Thomas Sutton* hath purchased to  
 ‘ him and his Heires, of our right Trusty,  
 ‘ and well beloved Cousin, and Coun-  
 ‘ cellor *Thomas* Earl of *Suffolk*, Lord  
 ‘ Chamberlaine of our Household, a great  
 ‘ and large Mansion House, commonly  
 ‘ called the late dissolved *Charter-house* be-

*Charter-*  
*house* pur-  
 chased by  
 Mr. *Sut-*  
 ton of the  
 Rt. Hon.  
*Thomas*  
 Earl of  
*Suffolk*.

*Charter-  
House* con-  
ceived to  
be a fitter  
Place for  
an Hospi-  
tal then  
*Halling-  
bury*.

‘ fides *Smithfield*, together with divers  
‘ Houses, Buildings, Courts, Yards, Gar-  
‘ dens, Orchards, Clofes, and other Here-  
‘ ditaments to or with the fame Man-  
‘ sion House, used, or enjoyed, or reputed  
‘ as Part, Parcel, Member, or belonging  
‘ thereunto wirhin our Countie of *Middle-*  
‘ *sex*. Which Mansion House, and other  
‘ the Premiffes, the said *Thomas Sutton*  
‘ doth conceive to be a more fit, and  
‘ commodious House and Place, to place,  
‘ erect, and found the said Hospitall, and Free  
‘ Schoole, and other the Godly and Cha-  
‘ ritable Uses aforefaid, then in *Halling-*  
‘ *bury*, alias *Hallingbury Bouchers* in the  
‘ said Act mentioned. And to that end,  
‘ the said *Thomas Sutton* hath been an  
‘ humble Sutor unto us, that we would be  
‘ graciously pleased to give License, Power,  
‘ and Authoritie unto him the said *Thomas*  
‘ *Sutton*, to Founde Erect, and Establish an  
‘ Hospitall, and Free-Schoole, and other the  
‘ Godly Charitable Uses by him intended in  
‘ the said House, called the late dissolved  
‘ *Charter-house* besides *Smithfield* in the said  
‘ premifes in our said Countie of *Middlesex*,  
‘ and to incorporate the Governors of the  
‘ fame hereafter named to be a Body Cor-  
‘ porate, and Politike, and to have per-  
‘ petuall

' petuall Succellion for ever in Fact, Deede,  
 ' and Name: And by such Name of Incor- Gover-  
 ' poration as is hereafter mentioned, to have nors  
 ' full Authoritie, and lawfull Capacitie and enabled  
 ' abilitie to Purchase, take, houlde, re- to pur-  
 ' ceive, and have to them and their Suc- chase,  
 ' cessors forever, Mannors, Lands, Tene- take and  
 ' ments, Tythes, Rents, Reversions, An- receive as  
 ' nuities, Pensions, Hereditaments, Goodes, well from  
 ' and Chattells whatsoever, as well of Us, his Majes-  
 ' our Heirs and Successors, as of any other ty as any  
 ' Person and Persons whatsoever for the other Per-  
 ' better Maintenance of the said Hospital, son,  
 ' Free-School, and other the Godly and Manors,  
 ' Charitable uses aforesaid: *Knowe* ye Lands,  
 ' therefore that we graciously affecting so Tene-  
 ' Good and Charitable a Work, of our ments,  
 ' princely Disposition and Care for the &c. for the  
 ' furtherance thereof, and of our especial Mainte-  
 ' Grace, certaine Knowledge, and mere Mo- nance of  
 ' tion have given, granted, and confirmed, an Hos-  
 ' and by these Presents do give, grante and pital and  
 ' confirme for Us, our Heires and Successors, Free-  
 ' unto the said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heires, School in  
 ' Executors, Administrators, and Assignes, Charter-  
 ' and to every of them, full Power, License, House.  
 ' and lawfull Authoritie at all Tymes here-  
 ' after, at his, and their Will and Pleasure,  
 ' to Place, Erect, Found and Establish at,  
 ' or

Power and  
 Authority  
 given to  
*Thomas*  
*Sutton*  
*Esq;* to  
 Erect and  
 Found an  
 Hospital  
 in *Charter*  
*House.*

‘ or in the said House, called the late Dis-  
‘ solved *Charter-House* besides *Smithfield*,  
‘ and other the Premisses within our said  
‘ Countie of *Middlesex*, *One Hospitall*,  
‘ House, or Place of abiding for the find-  
‘ ing sustentation and relief of poore, aged,  
‘ maimed, needy, or impotent People :  
‘ As also that the said *Thomas Sutton* dur-  
‘ ing his Life, and after his Death the Go-  
‘ vernors hereafter named, and their Suc-  
‘ cessors, and the Survivors, and Survivor  
‘ of them, and his, and their Successors  
‘ for ever, and the Governors thereof for  
‘ the Time being, and their Successors,  
‘ shall have full Power, License, and law-  
‘ full Authority at his, and their Wills and  
‘ Pleasures respectively, from Time to Time,  
‘ and at all Times hereafter, to place therein  
‘ such Master and Head of the said Hospi-  
‘ tall, and numbers of poor People, Men  
‘ and Children, and such other Members,  
‘ and Officers of the said Hospitall, as to  
‘ him the said *Thomas Sutton* during his  
‘ Life, and after his Deathe to the saied Go-  
‘ vernors, and their Successors, and to the  
‘ Survivors, and Survivor of them, and  
‘ to his, and their Successors, and to the  
‘ Governors thereof for the Time being,  
‘ and their Successors, shall seem convenient.

*And*

‘ *And* further we of our said special Grace,  
 ‘ certaine Knowledge, and meere Motion,  
 ‘ have given, granted, and confirmed, and  
 ‘ by these Presents do give, grante and  
 ‘ Confirme for Us, our Heirs and Succes-  
 ‘ sors, unto the said *Thomas Sutton*, his  
 ‘ Heirs, Executors, Administrators, and  
 ‘ Assignes, and to every of them, at  
 ‘ his and their Wills and Pleasure, full  
 ‘ Power, Licence, and lawful Authority at  
 ‘ all Times hereafter, to Place, Erect,  
 ‘ Found, and Establish at, or in the said  
 ‘ House, called the late dissolved *Charter-*  
 ‘ *House* besides *Smithfield*, and other the  
 ‘ Premises in our said Countie of *Middle-*  
 ‘ *sex*: *One Free-School* for the Instrueting, Power and  
 ‘ Teaching, Maintenance, and Education Authority  
 ‘ of poor Children or Scholars; and that given to  
 ‘ the said *Thomas Sutton* during his Life, *Sutton*  
 ‘ and after his Decease, the Governors here- *Esq;* to  
 ‘ after named, and their Successors, and Erect and  
 ‘ the Survivors, and Survivor of them, and Establish  
 ‘ his, and their Successors for ever, and the a Free  
 ‘ Governors of the said Hospital for the Grammar  
 ‘ Time being, and their Successors, shall School in  
 ‘ have full Power, License, and lawful *Charter-*  
 ‘ Authoritie at his and their Wills, and *House.*  
 ‘ Pleasures, from Time to Time, and  
 ‘ at all Times hereafter, to place therein  
 ‘ such

‘ such numbers of poor Children or Schol-  
 ‘ lars, as to him the said *Thomas Sutton*  
 ‘ during his Life, and after his Deacease to  
 ‘ the said Governors, and their Successors,  
 ‘ and to the Survivors and the Survivor of  
 ‘ them, and his and their Successors, and  
 ‘ to the Governors of the said Hospitall for  
 ‘ the Time being, and their Successors  
 ‘ shall seeme convenient. And likewise  
 ‘ one learned able and sufficient Person to  
 ‘ be School-master of the said Schoole, and  
 ‘ one other learned, able, and sufficient  
 ‘ Person to be Usher thereof, to teach and  
 ‘ instructe the said Children in Grammar :  
 ‘ And also one learned and Godly Preacher  
 ‘ to teach and preach the Word of God  
 ‘ to all the said Persons, poor People,  
 ‘ and Children, Members, and Officers,  
 ‘ at, or in the said House. *And further,*  
 ‘ we of our said especial Grace, certain  
 ‘ Knowledge, and meere Motion, have or-  
 ‘ dained, constituted, assigned, limited, and  
 ‘ appointed, and by these Presents for Us,  
 ‘ our Heirs, and Successors do ordain,  
 ‘ constitute, assigne, limit, and appoint,  
 ‘ that the said House, and other the Pre-  
 ‘ misses, shall from henceforh for ever  
 ‘ hereafter be, remain, continue, and be  
 ‘ converted, imployed, and used for an  
 ‘ Hospitall,

The Char-  
 ter-House  
 for ever  
 after to  
 continue  
 an Hospi-  
 tal.

Hospitall, and House, and Place, for the  
 Abideing, Dwelling, Sufstentation and Re-  
 leife of fuch number of poor People,  
 Men and Children, as the faid *Thomas*  
*Sutton* during his Life, and after his Death  
 the Governors hereafter named, and their  
 Succellors, and the Survivors and Survi-  
 vor of them, and his, and their Succellors,  
 and all, and every the Governors of the  
 Hospitall for the Time being, and their  
 Succellors fhall name, affigne, limit, or  
 appoint, to be lodged, harboured, abide,  
 and to be maintained, and relieved there,  
 and for the Abiding, Dwelling, Sufstenta-  
 tion, and Releif of fuch numbers of poor  
 Children, as the faid *Thomas Sutton* dur-  
 ing his Life, and after his Death the Go-  
 vernors hereafter named, and their Succel-  
 fors, and the Survivors and Survivor of  
 them, and his, and their Succellors, and the  
 Governors of the faid Hospitall for the  
 Time being, and their Succellors, fhall from  
 Time to Time, name, affigne, limit,  
 or appoint to be lodged, harboured,  
 abide and to be maintained and relieved  
 there, and for the Abyding, Dwelling,  
 Sufstentation, and finding of one School-  
 Master, one Usher, and one Preacher, as  
 is aforefaid, and of one Head, or Master  
 of

The Founda-  
tion of  
the Hos-  
pital.

' of the said House and Hospitall. And  
 ' that it shall and may be lawfull to and for  
 ' the said Master, Preacher, School-master,  
 ' Usher, poor People, Children, Members,  
 ' and Officers of the said Hospitall, or therein  
 ' to be placed, for the Time being, to as-  
 ' semble, be, remain, abide, and cohabite  
 ' together in the said Hospitall: And that  
 ' the said Hospitall shall for-ever hereafter  
 ' be incorporated, named, and called *The*  
 ' *Hospitall of King James, founded in*  
 ' *Charter-house in the Countie of Middle-*  
 ' *sex, at the humble Petition, and only*  
 ' *Costs and Charges of Thomas Sutton*  
 ' *Esquire*, and the same Hospitall and Free-  
 ' School, by the Name of *the Hospitall of*  
 ' *King James, founded in Charter-house*  
 ' *within the Countie of Middlesex, at the*  
 ' *humble Petition, and only Costs and*  
 ' *Charges of Thomas Sutton Esquire*; we do  
 ' firmly by these presents, for us, our Heires,  
 ' and Successors, Erect, Found, Establish  
 ' and Confirme to have continuance for-  
 ' ever: And for the better Maintenance  
 ' and Continuance of the said Hospitall  
 ' and Free-School, and the said Godly and  
 ' Charitable Uses, Entents and Purposes,  
 , and that the same may have, and take the  
 ' better Effect; and that all, and every the  
 ' Mannors,



Mannors, Lands, Tenements, and Rents,  
 Reversions, Services, and Hereditaments,  
 Goods and Chattells to be given, grant-  
 ed, conveyed, assigned, devised, willed,  
 limited or appointed, for the Mainte-  
 nance, Sustainment and Relief of the  
 Persons aforesaid in the said Hospitall,  
 may be the better governed, used, im-  
 ployed, and bestowed for the Mainte-  
 nance of the Persons in the said Hospi-  
 tall, for the Time being to have conti-  
 newance for-ever, *We Will and Or-*  
*dain*, and do appoint, assigne, limit,  
 and name, and for Us, our Heirs, and  
 Successors do grant, and ordain by these  
 Presents, that there shall be for-ever  
 hereafter Sixteen Persons, which shall be  
 called Governors of the Lands, Possessions,  
 Revenues and Goods of the Hospitall of  
 King *James*, founded in *Charter-house*  
 within the Countie of *Middlesex*, at the  
 humble Petition, and only Costs and  
 Charges of *Thomas Sutton* Esquire: And  
 for that purpose we have elected, nomi-  
 nated, ordained, assigned, constituted, li-  
 mited and appointed, and by these Presents,  
 do for Us, our Heirs, and Successors,  
 elect, nominate, ordain, assigne, con-  
 stitute, limit, and appoint the Right Re-  
 verend

Sixteen  
 Persons  
 appointed  
 for Gover-  
 nors.

The Names of the first and present Governors of the Hospital of King James, founded in Charter-house, &c.

verend Father in God, *George*, now Archbishop of *Canterbury*, our right Trustie, and well beloved Councillor *Thomas Lord Ellesmere* Lord Chancellor of *England*, our right Trustie and well-beloved Cousin and Counsellor *Robert Earl of Salisbury* Lord high Treasurer of *England*, *John* the Elect Bishop of *London*, *Launcelot* now Bishop of *Ely*, Sir *Edward Coke* Knight, Chief Justice of the *Common-Pleas*, Sir *Thomas Foster* Knight, one of our Justices of our Court of *Common-Pleas*, Sir *Henry Hobart* Knight, and Barronet our Attorney General, *John Overall* now Dean of the Cathedrall Church of *St. Paul* in *London*, *George Mountain* Dean of the Collegiate Church of *Westminster*, *Henry Thursbye* Esq; one of the Masters of our Court of *Chancerye*, *Jeffery Nightingale* Esquire, *Richard Sutton* Esquire, *John Lawe* Gent. *Thomas Browne* Gent. and the Master of the Hospital of King *James*, founded in *Charter-house* within the Countie of *Middlesex*, at the humble Petition and only Costs and Charges of *Thomas Sutton* Esquire; and such Person and Persons as shall from Time to Time be Master, or Masters of the said Hospitall, for, and during

The Master of the Hospital to be one of the Governors.

during such Time as they shall be Master  
 sters thereof, to be the first and present  
 Governors of the Lands, Possessions, Re-  
 venues, and Goods of the Hospitall of  
 King *James*, founded in *Charter-house*  
 within the Countie of *Middlesex*, at the  
 humble Petition and only Costs and  
 Charges of *Thomas Sutton* Esquire: And  
 that they and the Survivors of them, and  
 such as the Survivors or Survivor of  
 them shall from Time to Time Elect,  
 and Choose to make up the number of  
 Sixteen, when, and as often as any of  
 them, or any of their Successors shall  
 happen to decease or be removed from  
 being Governors, or Governor thereof,  
 shall be incorporated, and have a perpe-  
 tual Succession for-ever in Deed, Fact,  
 and Name, and shall be one Body Cor-  
 porate and Politique: And that the said  
 Persons, and their Successors and the  
 Survivors and Survivor of them, and  
 his and their Successors, and such as  
 shall be elected and chosen to succeed  
 them as aforesaid, shall be incorporated,  
 named, and called by the Name of the  
 Governors of the Lands, Possessions, Re-  
 venues and Goods of the Hospitall of King  
*James*, founded in *Charter-house* with-  
 in

Gover-  
nors in-  
corporat-  
ed by his  
Majesty's  
Letters,  
Patents.

' within the County of *Middlesex*, at the  
 ' humble Petition, and onlie Costs and  
 ' Charges of *Thomas Sutton* Esquire: And  
 ' them by the Name of the Governors of  
 ' the Lands, Possessions, Revenues, and  
 ' Goods of the Hospitall of King *James*,  
 ' founded in *Charter-house* within the  
 ' Countie of *Middlesex*, at the humble Pe-  
 ' tition and only Costs and Charges of  
 ' *Thomas Sutton* Esquire, one Bodie Cor-  
 ' porate and Politique by that Name to have  
 ' perpetual Succession for-ever to endure.  
 ' *We do*, by these presents for Us, our Heires  
 ' and Successors, really and fully Incor-  
 ' porate, Make, Erect, Ordaine, Name,  
 ' Constitute, and Establish, and that by  
 ' the same Name of the Governors of the  
 ' Lands, Possessions, Revenues and Goods  
 ' of the Hospitall of King *James*, founded  
 ' in *Charter-house* within the Countie of  
 ' *Middlesex*, at the humble Petition and  
 ' only Costs and Charges of *Thomas Sutton*  
 ' Esquire, they and their Successors, and  
 ' Survivors and Survivor of them, and  
 ' his, and their Successors, and the Persons  
 ' to be elected and chosen as aforesaid,  
 ' shall for ever hereafter be incorporated,  
 ' named and called, and shall by the same  
 ' Name have perpetual Succession for ever;  
 ' and

' and that they by the same Name be, and  
 ' shall be and continue Persons able and  
 ' capable in the Law from Time to Time,  
 ' and shall by that Name of Incorporation  
 ' have full Power, Authoritie and lawfull  
 ' Capacitie and Abilitie to purchase, take,  
 ' hold, receive, enjoy, and have to them,  
 ' and their Successors, for ever, as well  
 ' Goods and Chattells, as Mannors, Lands,  
 ' Tenements, Rents, Reversions, Annuities,  
 ' and Hereditaments whatsoever, as well of  
 ' Us, our Heirs and Successors, as of the  
 ' said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heirs, Executors  
 ' or Assignes, or any other Person or Per-  
 ' sons whatsoever, and also that the said Governors to  
 ' Governors for the Time being, and their sue and to  
 ' Successors shall have full Power and law- be sued,  
 ' ful Authority by the aforesaid Name of implead  
 ' Governors of the Lands, Possessions, Re- and to be  
 ' venues, and Goods of the Hospitall of implead-  
 ' King *James* founded in *Charter-house* ed by the  
 ' within the Countie of *Middlesex*, at the Name and  
 ' humble Petition and only Costs and Title of  
 ' Charges of *Thomas Sutton* Esquire, to their In-  
 ' sue and to be sued, implead and to be corporation.  
 ' impleaded, to answer and to be answered  
 ' unto in all manner of Courts and Places  
 ' that now are or hereafter shall be within  
 ' this our Realm or elsewhere, as well Tem-

Governors to have a Common Seal.

Governors not to do any Act whereby any the Mannors, Lands, &c. may be transferred to

poral as Spiritual, in all manner of Suits  
 whatsoever, and of what Nature and Kinde  
 soever such Suits or Actions be or shall be,  
 in the same and as ample Manner, and  
 Forme to all Intents, Constructions and  
 Purposes, as any other Person or Persons,  
 Bodies Politique or Corporate of this our  
 Realm of *England*, being able Persons in  
 Law, may doe: And furthermore we will  
 and grant, by these Presents, for Us, our  
 Heirs and Successors, unto the said Go-  
 vernors for the Time being and their Suc-  
 cessors, that they and their Successors shall  
 have and enjoy for ever a common Seale,  
 wherein shall be ingraven the Name and  
 Armes of the said *Thomas Sutton*, where-  
 by the same Corporation shall or may  
 Seale any manner of Instrument touch-  
 ing the same Corporation, and the Ma-  
 nors, Lands, Tenements, Rents, Rever-  
 sions, Annuities and Hereditaments, Goods,  
 Chattels and other Things thereunto be-  
 longing, or in any wise touching or con-  
 cerning the same: Nevertheless it is our  
 true Intent and Meaning, that neither the  
 said Governors for the Time being, and  
 their Successors, nor any of them, shall do  
 or suffer to be done, at any Time hereafter,  
 any Act or Thing whereby or by Means  
 any Use contrary to the true Meaning of these Presents.  
 whereof

' whereof any of the Mannors, Lands, Te-  
 ' nements, Rents, Reversions, Annuities, or  
 ' Hereditaments of the said Incorporation,  
 ' or any Estate, Interest, Possession, or Pro-  
 ' pertie of or in the same, or any of them  
 ' shall be conveyed, vested, or transferred  
 ' in, or to any other whatsoever, contrarie  
 ' to the True meaning hereof, other than  
 ' by such Leases as are hereafter mentioned,  
 ' and that in such Manner and Forme as is  
 ' hereafter expressed, and not otherwise, and  
 ' that such Construction shall be made upon Construc-  
tion to be  
made for  
the  
Benefit of  
the Poor.  
 ' this Foundation and Incorporation, as shall  
 ' be most Beneficiall and available for the  
 ' Maintenance of the Poore, and for the  
 ' repressing, and avoiding of all Acts and  
 ' Devices to be invented or put in Use con-  
 ' trary to the true Meaning of these Pre-  
 ' sents: And therefore our Will and Plea-  
 ' sure is, and so for Us our Heirs and Suc-  
 ' cessors we do Ordaine, that the said Go-  
 ' vernors for the Time being, or their Suc-  
 ' cessors, or any of them, shall not make any  
 ' Lease, Grant, Conveyance, or Estate of any  
 ' the said Mannors, Lands, Tenements or  
 ' Hereditaments which shall exceed the Num-  
 ' ber of one and twenty Years, and that  
 ' either in Possession, or not above two  
 ' Years before the End and Expiration or

Governors dying  
or being  
removed,  
the Resi-  
due sur-  
viving to  
remaine  
Incorpo-  
rate.

' Determination of the Estate or Estates in  
 ' Possession, and whereupon the accustom-  
 ' able Yearly Rent or more by the greater  
 ' Part of five Years next before the making  
 ' of any such Lease reserved, Due or Pay-  
 ' able, shall not be reserved and Yearly pay-  
 ' able during the continuance of every such  
 ' Lease: And also we do ordaine, grant,  
 ' and appoint by these Presents for Us our  
 ' our Heirs and Successors, that so often and  
 ' whensoever any one or more of the said  
 ' Governors for the Time being, or any  
 ' other Governor or Governors that shall be  
 ' chosen hereafter, shall Fortune to depart  
 ' this Life, or to be removed from his or  
 ' their Place of Governor or Governors,  
 ' that then and so often the Residue of the  
 ' said Governor or Governors and their  
 ' Successors shall be, continue, and remain  
 ' Incorporate by the same Name of the  
 ' Governors of the Lands, Possessions, Re-  
 ' venues and Goods of the Hospitall of  
 ' King *James*, founded in *Charter-house*  
 ' within the Countie of *Middlesex*, at  
 ' the humble Petition and only Costs and  
 ' Charges of *Thomas Sutton* Esquire, to all  
 ' Intents, Constructions, and Purposes ac-  
 ' cording to the true Meaning of these  
 ' Presents, as if all the said Governor and  
 ' Gover-



‘ Governors had continued, and that then  
 ‘ and so often it shall be lawfull for the Rest  
 ‘ of the Governors, or the greater Number  
 ‘ of them to elect, nominate, choose, and  
 ‘ appoint one or more meete Person, or  
 ‘ Persons, according to the True intent and  
 ‘ Meaning of these Presents, into the Room  
 ‘ and Place, or Rooms and Places of every  
 ‘ such Governor or Governors which shall  
 ‘ so depart this Life or be removed, which  
 ‘ Person and Persons so nominated, elected,  
 ‘ chosen, and agreed upon by the said Go-  
 ‘ vernors, or by the greater Number of  
 ‘ them, shall be, and shall be reputed and  
 ‘ taken from the Time of his or their  
 ‘ Election, to be from thenceforth, together  
 ‘ with the others, Governors of the said  
 ‘ Hospitall, and after this Manner to pro-  
 ‘ ceed whensoever and as often as need shall  
 ‘ require, and the same Election to be  
 ‘ made within two Months that any of the  
 ‘ said Governor or Governors shall depart this  
 ‘ Life, or be removed: And that the said  
 ‘ *Thomas Sutton* during his Life, and after  
 ‘ his Decease the said Governors for the  
 ‘ Time being, or the more Part of them,  
 ‘ shall have full Power and Authority to  
 ‘ Nominate, Assigne, and Appoint, and  
 ‘ and shall, and may Name, Assigne, and

Election  
 of Gover-  
 nors to be  
 made  
 within  
 two Mo-  
 nths af-  
 ter any  
 shall de-  
 cease or  
 be remo-  
 ved.

The number of  
poor  
People  
and Children  
to increase and  
be maintained  
according  
to the increase  
of the Revenues.

‘ Appoint, when and as often as he and  
 ‘ they shall think Good, such Number and  
 ‘ Numbers of Person and Persons as he and  
 ‘ they shall thinke convenient to be poor  
 ‘ Men, Children and Schollars, Master, Prea-  
 ‘ cher, Schoolmaster, Usher, Members, Of-  
 ‘ ficer and Officers of, or for the said Hos-  
 ‘ pitall, as he the said *Thomas Sutton* dur-  
 ‘ ing his Life, and after his Decease the  
 ‘ Governors for the Time being and their  
 ‘ Successors, or the more Part of them,  
 ‘ shall think meete and convenient: Never-  
 ‘ theless if the Rents, Revenues, or Profits  
 ‘ of all or any of the Mannors, Lands,  
 ‘ Tenements, and Hereditaments, Goods,  
 ‘ or Chattels, at any Time to be granted  
 ‘ and conveyed to the said Governors of  
 ‘ the said Hospitall and their Successors, for  
 ‘ the Maintenance of the People in the said  
 ‘ Hospitall, shall happen to increase, or to  
 ‘ be raised, or augmented to a better or  
 ‘ greater yearly Value than formerly the  
 ‘ same was, or that the Rents, Revenues  
 ‘ and Possessions of the said Hospitall shall  
 ‘ be further increased by the Determination  
 ‘ of any former Estates in any of the said  
 ‘ Possessions of the said Hospitall, or other-  
 ‘ wise; that all and every such increase shall  
 ‘ be employed to the Maintenance of more  
 ‘ and

‘ and other poor People to be placed in the  
 ‘ said Hospitall, or to the further Augmen-  
 ‘ tation of the Allowances of those Persons  
 ‘ that for the Time being shall be in the  
 ‘ said Hospitall, according to the true In-  
 ‘ tent and Meaning of these Presents, and  
 ‘ shall not be converted or imployed to any  
 ‘ private Use: And also We do by these  
 ‘ Presents, for Us, our Heirs and Succes-  
 ‘ sors, Will, Grant and Ordaine, that when-  
 ‘ soever and as often as any of the said Pla-  
 ‘ ces or Rooms of any of the said Master,  
 ‘ Preacher, School-master, or Uther, poor  
 ‘ Men or Children, Schollars, Members,  
 ‘ or Officers, or any of them, shall happen  
 ‘ to become void by Death, Resignation,  
 ‘ Deprivation, or otherwise, that then and  
 ‘ so often it shall and may be lawfull for the  
 ‘ said *Thomas Sutton* during his Life, and  
 ‘ after his Death, for the said Governors for  
 ‘ the Time being, and their Successors or the  
 ‘ most Part of them, within one Month  
 ‘ after such Avoidance, by writing under the  
 ‘ Seale of the said *Thomas Sutton* during  
 ‘ his Life, and after his Death by the said  
 ‘ Governors for the Time being, and their  
 ‘ Successors, under their common Seale,  
 ‘ to nominate and appoint other meet Per-  
 ‘ son and Persons in the Rooms, Place,

New Elec-  
 tion of  
 Officers,  
 poor  
 People and  
 Schollars  
 to be made  
 by Mr.  
*Sutton* dur-  
 ing his  
 Life, and  
 after by  
 the Go-  
 vernors  
 when any  
 Place shall  
 become  
 void.

The King  
to nomi-  
nate af-  
er  
Default  
made by  
the Go-  
vernors by  
the fpace  
of two  
Months.

‘ and Places of them and every of them fo  
 ‘ deceasing, resigning, or otherwise becom-  
 ‘ ing void : And if in case the said Gover-  
 ‘ nors and their Successors for the Time be-  
 ‘ ing, or the most Part of them, shall not  
 ‘ within two Months after such avoidance,  
 ‘ nominate, assigne, and appoint as is afore-  
 ‘ said, that then and so often and in every  
 ‘ such Case, from and after the Death of  
 ‘ the said *Thomas Sutton*, it shall be law-  
 ‘ full for Us, our Heirs and Successors, by  
 ‘ Letters Patents under the great Seale of  
 ‘ *England*, or privy Seale, to nominate and  
 ‘ appoint meete Person and Persons to all  
 ‘ and every such Office, Rooms, Place and  
 ‘ Places as shall remaine voide for the Time  
 ‘ aforesaid, by the Default of the said Go-  
 ‘ vernors and their Successors, as is afore-  
 ‘ said : And we do further, of our especial  
 ‘ Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Mo-  
 ‘ tion for Us, our Heirs, and Successors,  
 ‘ give and grant, that the said Master, Prea-  
 ‘ cher, School-master, Usher, poor Men,  
 ‘ Children, Schollars, Members, and Offi-  
 ‘ cers of the said Hospitall, and every of  
 ‘ them, shall be allowed, ordered, directed,  
 ‘ visited, placed, or displaced by the said  
 ‘ *Thomas Sutton* during his Life, and after  
 ‘ his Death by the said Governor and  
 ‘ Gover-

‘ Governors, and their Successors or the  
 ‘ more Part of them, according to such  
 ‘ Allowances, Rules, Statutes, and Ordi-  
 ‘ nances, as shall be appointed, set forth,  
 ‘ made, devised, or established by the said  
 ‘ *Thomas Sutton* during his Life, in writ-  
 ‘ ing under his Hand and Seale, and after  
 ‘ his Death by the Governors for the Time  
 ‘ being, and their Successors, or the more  
 ‘ Part of them under the said common Seal:

‘ And further we have given and granted, Governors to  
 ‘ and by these Presents do give and grant make Sta-  
 ‘ to the said *Thomas Sutton* during his Life, tutes,  
 ‘ by writing under his Hand and Seale, and Rules and  
 ‘ to the said Governors and their Succes- Ordinan-  
 ‘ sors for the Time being, or the more Part ces, by  
 ‘ of them after his Decease, under the said writing  
 ‘ Common Seal, to make, set down, and under  
 ‘ appoint such Rules, Statutes and Ordi- their com-  
 ‘ nances, for the Rule, Government, and monSeale,  
 ‘ well ordering the said Hospitall, and of  
 ‘ the said Master, Preacher, School-master,  
 ‘ Usher, poor People, Children, Schollars,  
 ‘ Members, and Officers for the Time be-  
 ‘ ing, and for their and every of their Wa-  
 ‘ ges, Stipends, and Allowances, for and  
 ‘ towards their or any of their Mainte-  
 ‘ nance and Relief, as to the said *Thomas*  
 ‘ *Sutton* during his Life, and after his De-  
 ‘ cease

Power and Authority given to the Governors after the Decease of Mr. Sutton, to visit, punish, place or displace the Master, Preacher, and other the Officers and Members of the Hospitall.

‘ cease to the said Governors and their Suc-  
 ‘ cessors for the Time being, or the more  
 ‘ Part of them, shall seem meet and con-  
 ‘ venient: And that the same Orders, Rules,  
 ‘ Statutes, and Ordinances so by him, them,  
 ‘ or any of them to be made, set downe,  
 ‘ and prescribed as aforesaid, shall be and  
 ‘ stand in full Force and Strength in Law,  
 ‘ to all constructions, intents, and purposes,  
 ‘ the same being not repugnant to our Pre-  
 ‘ rogative Royal, nor contrary to the Laws,  
 ‘ and Statutes of this our Realm of *Eng-*  
 ‘ *land*, nor to any Ecclesiastical Canons  
 ‘ or Constitutions of the Church of *Eng-*  
 ‘ *land*, which then shall be in Force: And  
 ‘ that for the better Government of the  
 ‘ said Hospitall, the said *Thomas Sutton*  
 ‘ during his Life, and after his Decease, the  
 ‘ said Governors for the Time being, or  
 ‘ the most Part of them, or such and so  
 ‘ many of them as the said *Thomas Sutton*  
 ‘ shall by his Writing under his Hand and  
 ‘ Seal thereunto assigne, appoint, and no-  
 ‘ minate, shall and may after the Decease  
 ‘ of the said *Thomas Sutton* have full Power  
 ‘ and lawful Authority to visit, order, and  
 ‘ punish, place, or displace the Master, Prea-  
 ‘ cher, School-master, Usher, poor People,  
 ‘ Schollars, Members and Officers of the  
 ‘ said

said Hospitall and every of them, and to  
order, reform and redress all and every the  
Disorders, Misdemeanors, Offences, and  
Abuses in the Persons aforesaid, and every  
of them, or in the said Hospitall or Free-  
School, or in or touching the Govern-  
ment, Order, and Disposing of the same,  
and to censure, suspend, deprive, and dis-  
place the said Master, Preacher, School-  
master, Usher, poor People, Schollars,  
Members and Officers, and all, every  
or any of them, as to him the said *Tho-  
mas Sutton* during his Life, and after his  
Death, to the said Governors for the Time  
being and their Successors, or the more  
Part of them, or to such and so many of  
them as the said *Thomas Sutton* by any his  
writing under his Hand and Seal shall  
thereunto assigne, nominate and appoint,  
shall to him or them respectively seem fit,  
just, and convenient. So always that no  
Visitation, Act, or Thing in or touching  
the same, be had, made, or done by any  
Person or Persons during the Life of the  
said *Thomas Sutton*, other than by the  
said *Thomas Sutton*, and after his Death by  
the said Governors for the Time being  
and their Successors, or the more Part of  
them, or by such or so many of them as  
the

No Visita-  
tion to be  
made or  
done by  
the Go-  
vernors,  
during  
the Life of  
Mr. *Sut-  
ton*.

The Hospitall,  
Master,  
Preacher,  
School-Master,  
Usher,  
Members  
and Officers,  
freed from all  
Visitation  
of the Ordinary.

License  
and Authority  
given to  
the Governors  
to purchase,  
take and  
receive of  
Mr. Sutton,  
for the Maintenance  
of the Hospitall,  
viz.

‘ the said *Thomas Sutton* by his writing under  
‘ der his Hand and Seal shall nominate and  
‘ appoint thereunto: And we of our further  
‘ special Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer  
‘ Motion, and by our supreme Power and  
‘ Authority for Us, our Heirs and Successors  
‘ do Will, Ordain, and Grant, that  
‘ the said Hospitall, and the Master, Preacher,  
‘ School-master, Usher, Members,  
‘ Officers, and all other the Persons to be  
‘ placed in the said Hospitall, shall for ever  
‘ hereafter be exempted and freed of and  
‘ from all Visitation, Punishment, and Correction  
‘ to be had, used, or exercised in  
‘ or upon them or any of them by the Ordinary  
‘ of the Diocess for the Time being,  
‘ or by any other Person or Persons whatsoever,  
‘ other than by the said *Thomas Sutton* during his Life, and after his Death,  
‘ by the said Governors for the Time being,  
‘ and their Successors: And further know  
‘ ye, that we for the Considerations aforesaid,  
‘ of our special Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer  
‘ Motion, have given and granted, and by these Presents for Us,  
‘ our Heirs and Successors do give and grant  
‘ to the said Governors of the Lands, Possessions,  
‘ Revenues and Goods of the Hospitall of King *James*,  
‘ founded in  
‘ Char-



Charter-house within the Countie of  
 Middlesex, at the humble Petition and on-  
 ly Costs and Charges of *Thomas Sutton*  
 Esquire and to their Successors for ever,  
 our special Licence, and free and lawful  
 Liberty, Power and Authority to get,  
 purchase, receive and take to them, and  
 their Successors for ever, for the Mainte-  
 nance, Sustentation, and Relief of all  
 and every the Person and Persons to be  
 placed in the said Hospitall, of and from  
 the said *Thomas Sutton* his Heirs and As-  
 signes, the said great and large Mansion The great and large Mansion  
 House, commonly called *Charter-house* House called Charter-house  
 besides *Smithfield*, together with the Hou- in the County of Middlesex.  
 ses, Buildings, Courts, Yards, Gardens,  
 Orchards, Clofes, and other Heredita-  
 ments, lately purchased by the said *Tho-*  
*mas Sutton*, of the said *Thomas* Earl of  
*Suffolk*. And all those his Mannors and Southmin-  
 Lordships of *Southminster*, *Norton*, *Little* ston, Little  
*Hallingbury*, alias *Hallingbury Bouchers*, Hallingbu-  
 and *Much Stambridge* in the Countie of ry and  
*Essex*, with all their and every of their Much  
 Rights, Members, and Appurtenances Stam-  
 whatsoever, and also all those his Man- bridge in  
 nors and Lordships of *Bustlingthorpe* alias the Coun-  
*Bustlingthorp* and *Dunnesby* in the Coun- ty of Essex.  
 tie of *Lincoln*, with their and every of Bustling-  
 their thorp and  
Dunnesby, in  
the Coun-  
ty of Lin-  
coln,

*Salthorp,*  
*Chilton,*  
and *Black-*  
*grove,* in  
the Coun-  
ty of *Wilts.*

‘ their Rights, Members, and Appurtenan-  
‘ ces whatsoever. And also all those his  
‘ Mannors of *Salthorp*, alias *Saltrop*, alias  
‘ *Halthrop*, *Chilton*, and *Blackgrove* in the  
‘ County of *Wilts*, with their and every of  
‘ their Rights, Members, and Appurtenan-  
‘ ces; and also all those his Lands and Pasture  
‘ Grounds called *Blackgrove*, containing by  
‘ Estimation two hundred Acres of Pasture  
‘ with the Appurtenances in *Blackgrove* and  
‘ *Wroughton* in the said County of *Wilts*,

*Missenden*  
in the  
County of  
*Wilts.*

‘ and all that his Mannor of *Missenden*  
‘ otherwise called the Mannors of *Missenden*,  
‘ in the Parishes of *Wroughton*, *Lydyerde*,  
‘ and *Tregose* in the said County of *Wilts*,

*Elcomb*  
and *El-*  
*comb Park* in  
the  
County of  
*Wilts.*

‘ with all his Rights, Members, and Ap-  
‘ purtenances: And all that his Mannor of  
‘ *Elcombe* and *Parke*, called *Elcombe-*  
‘ *Parke*, with the Appurtenances in the

*Wattlescote*  
alias  
*Wiglescote*  
and *Wes-*  
*cote* alias  
*Wiscete*, in  
the Coun-  
ty of  
*Wilts.*

‘ said County of *Wilts*: And also all that  
‘ his Mannor of *Wattlescote*, alias *Wigle-*  
‘ *scete*, alias *Wigelscete* with the Appurte-  
‘ nances in the said County of *Wilts*: And  
‘ also all that his Mannor of *Westcote*, alias  
‘ *Wescete*, with the Appurtenances in the said  
‘ County of *Wilts*: And also all those his  
‘ Lands and Pastures containing by Estimation  
‘ one hundred Acres of Land, and threescore  
‘ Acres of Pasture, with the Appurtenan-

‘ ces

' ces in *Wiglescote* and *Wroughton* in the  
 ' said County of *Wilts*: And all that his  
 ' Mannor of *Uffcote* with the Appurtenan- *Uffcote in*  
 ' ces in the said County of *Wilts*: And al- the Coun-  
 ' so all those his two Messuages and one ty of *Wilts*  
 ' thousand Acres of Land, two thousand  
 ' Acres of Pasture, three hundred Acres of  
 ' Meadow, and three hundred Acres of  
 ' Wood, with the Appurtenances in *Broad- Broadbin-*  
 ' *hinton* in the said County of *Wilts*: And ton in the  
 ' also all those the Mannors and Lordships County of  
 ' of *Campes*, alias *Campes-Castle*, otherwise *Wilts.*  
 ' called *Castle Campes* with the Appurte- *Campes*,  
 ' nances, situate, lying, being, extending alias *Cam-  
 ' in the Counties of *Cambridge* and *Essex*, *pes-Castle*  
 ' or in either of them, or elsewhere within in the  
 ' the Realm of *England*; and also all that County of  
 ' his Mannor of *Balsbam* in the County of *Cambridge*  
 ' *Cambridge*, with all and singular the *Balsbam*  
 ' Rights, Members and Appurtenances there- in the  
 ' of whatsoever; and also all those his Messu- County of  
 ' ages and Lands, situate, lying and being in *Cambridge*  
 ' the Parishes of *Hackney* and *Tottenham* in *Messuages*  
 ' the County of *Middlesex* or in either of and Lands  
 ' them, with their and every of their Rights, in *Hack-  
 ' Members and Appurtenances whatsoever, *ney* and  
 ' which said Messuage was lately purchased *Tottenham*  
 ' of Sir *William Bowyer* Knight, and the in the  
 ' said Lands in *Tottenham* now are or late- County of  
 ' ly *Middlesex.***

Advow-  
sons and  
Patrona-  
ges of  
Churches.

All Let-  
ters Pat-  
ents, In-  
dentures,  
Deeds,  
Evidences  
Bonds and  
Writings  
concern-  
ing the  
Premises.

ly were in the Tenure or Occupation of  
*William Benning* Yeoman: And also all  
 and singular the Mannors, Lordships, Me-  
 suages, Lands, Tenements, Reversions,  
 Services, Meadows, Pastures, Woods, Ad-  
 vowsons, Patronages of Churches and  
 Hereditaments of the said *Thomas Sutton*  
 whatsoever, situate, lying, or being with-  
 in the said Counties of *Essex, Lincoln,*  
*Wilts, Cambridge, and Middlesex,* or in  
 any of them, with all and every their  
 Rights, Members, and Appurteneances  
 whatsoever, or any such, and so many and  
 such Part of the said Mannors, Advow-  
 sons, Lands, Tenements, and Heredita-  
 ments, or of any Part thereof, as the  
 said *Thomas Sutton* shall think Meet:  
 And also all Letters Patents, Indentures,  
 Deeds, Evidences, Bonds and Writings  
 concerning the Premises or any of them,  
 which shall be given and granted by the  
 said *Thomas Sutton* to the said Governors  
 and their Successors, and all such Con-  
 ditions, Warrants, Vouchers, Actions,  
 Suits, Entries, Benefits, and Demands as  
 shall be or may be had by any Person  
 or Persons upon or by Reason of them  
 or any of them (except all his Man-  
 nors or Lordships of *Littlebury and Had-*  
*stocke,*

' *stocke*, with the Appurtenances in the  
 ' said County of *Essex* aforesaid) or in ei-  
 ' ther of them, though the Premisses or any  
 ' of them be holden of us immediately in  
 ' Chief, or by Knights Service, or otherwise  
 ' howsoever, and without any License or  
 ' Pardon for Alienation of them or any of  
 ' them, the Statute of Mortmaine, or any  
 ' other Act, Statute, Ordinance, or Provi-  
 ' sion to the Contrary in any wise not-  
 ' withstanding: And also we do give and  
 ' grant like Licence, Power, and Authority to  
 ' the said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heirs and As-  
 ' signes, to give, grant, and assure unto the  
 ' said Governors, and their Successors, for  
 ' the Uses, Intents, and Purposes aforesaid,  
 ' all and every the said great and large Man-  
 ' sion-House commonly called *Charter-*  
 ' *house* besides *Smithfield*, together with the  
 ' Houses, Buildings, Courts, Yards, Gar-  
 ' dens, Orchards, Closes, and other Here-  
 ' ditaments lately purchased by the said  
 ' *Thomas Sutton*, of the said *Thomas Earl*  
 ' of *Suffolk*; and all those his Mannors and  
 ' Lordships of *Southminster*, *Norton*, *Little*  
 ' *Hallingbury* alias *Hallingbury Bouchers*,  
 ' and *Much Stambridge* in the said County  
 ' of *Essex*, with all their and every of their  
 ' Rights, Members and Appurtenances what-  
 ' soever:

The Man-  
 nors of  
*Littlebury*  
 and *Had-*  
*stock* in  
 the County  
 of *Essex*  
 only ex-  
 cepted.

' soever: And also all those his Man-  
 ' nors and Lordships of *Bustingthorpe*, alias  
 ' *Buslingthorpe* and *Dunnesby* in the Coun-  
 ' ty of *Lincoln*, with their and every of  
 ' their Rights, Members, and Appurtenan-  
 ' ces whatsoever: And also all those his  
 ' Mannors of *Salthorpe*, alias *Saltrope*, alias  
 ' *Halthrop*, *Chilton* and *Blackgrove* in  
 ' the County of *Wilts*, with their and  
 ' every of their Rights, Members, and  
 ' Appurtenances: And also all those his  
 ' Lands and Pasture Grounds called *Black-*  
 ' *grove*, containing by Estimation two hun-  
 ' dred Acres of Pasture, with their Appur-  
 ' tenances in *Blackgrove* and *Wroughton* in  
 ' the said County of *Wilts*: And also all  
 ' that his Mannor of *Missenden*, otherwise  
 ' called the Mannor of *Misunden* in the  
 ' Parishes of *Wroughton*, *Lydeyard* and  
 ' *Tregose* in the said County of *Wilts*, with  
 ' all his Rights, Members and Appurtenan-  
 ' ces; and all that his Mannor of *Elcomb*,  
 ' and the Park called *Elcomb-Park*, with  
 ' the Appurtenances in the said County of  
 ' *Wilts*: And also all that his Mannor of  
 ' *Wattlecote*, alias *Wiglescete*, alias *Wigel-*  
 ' *scete* with the Appurtenances in the said  
 ' County of *Wilts*: And also all that his  
 ' Mannor of *Wescote*, alias *Wescete*, with  
 ' the

the Appurtenances in the said County of  
*Wilts*; and also all those his Lands and  
Pastures, containing by Estimation one  
hundred Acres of Land, and threescore  
Acres of Pasture, with the Appurtenances  
in *Wiglescote* and *Wroughton* in the said  
County of *Wilts*: And all that his Man-  
nors of *Uffcote* with the Appurtenances  
in the said County of *Wilts*: And also  
all those his two Messuages, and one thou-  
sand Acres of Land, two thousand Acres  
of Pasture, three hundred Acres of Mea-  
dow, and three hundred Acres of Wood,  
with the Appurtenances, in *Brodehinton*,  
in the said County of *Wilts*: And all  
those his Mannors and Lordships of *Cam-  
pes*, alias *Campes-Castle*, otherwise called  
*Castle Campes*, with the Appurtenances,  
situate, lying, and being, and extending  
in the Counties of *Cambridge* and *Essex*,  
or in either of them, or elsewhere with-  
in the Realm of *England*: And also all  
that his Mannor of *Balsbam* in the Coun-  
ty of *Cambridge* with all and singular the  
Rights, Members, and Appurtenances  
thereof whatsoever: And all those his  
Messuages and Lands, situate, lying, and  
being in the Parishes of *Hackney* and *Tot-  
tenham*, in the County of *Middlesex*, or

‘ in either of them, with their and either  
 ‘ of their Rights, Members, and Appurte-  
 ‘ nances whatsoever, which said Messuage  
 ‘ was lately purchased of Sir *William Bow-*  
 ‘ *er* Knight, and the said Lands in *Totten-*  
 ‘ *ham* now are or late were in the Tenure  
 ‘ or Occupation of *William Benning* Yeo-  
 ‘ man: And also all and singular the Man-  
 ‘ nors, Lordships, Messuages, Lands, Te-  
 ‘ nements, Reversions, Services, Meadows,  
 ‘ Pastures, Woods, Advowsons, Patronages  
 ‘ of Churches, and Hereditaments of the  
 ‘ said *Thomas Sutton* whatsoever, situate,  
 ‘ lying, or being within the said Counties  
 ‘ of *Essex, Lincoln, Wilts, Cambridge,*  
 ‘ and *Middlesex*, or any of them, with all  
 ‘ and every of their Rights, Members and  
 ‘ Appurtenances whatsoever, or any such,  
 ‘ and so many and such Part of the said  
 ‘ Mannors, Advowsons, Lands, Tenements,  
 ‘ and Hereditaments, or of any Part there-  
 ‘ of, as the said *Thomas Sutton* shall think  
 ‘ Meete: And also all Letters Patents,  
 ‘ Indentures, Deeds, Evidences, Bonds, and  
 ‘ Writings concerning the Premises, or any  
 ‘ of them which shall be so given and  
 ‘ granted by the said *Thomas Sutton* to the  
 ‘ said Governors and their Successors; and  
 ‘ all such Conditions, Warrants, Vouchers,  
 ‘ Actions,



' Actions, Suits, Entries, Benefits, and De-  
 ' mands, as shall be or may be had by any  
 ' Person or Persons upon or by Reason of  
 ' them or any of them (except all his Man-  
 ' nors or Lordships of *Littlebury* and *Had-*  
 ' *stocke*, with the Appurtenances, in the said  
 ' County of *Essex* aforesaid) or in either  
 ' of them, though the Premises or any of  
 ' them be holden of us immediately in  
 ' Chief, or by Knights Service, or other-  
 ' wise howsoever, and without any Licence  
 ' or Pardon for Alienation of them or any  
 ' of them, the Statute of Mortmain, or  
 ' any other Act, Statute, Ordinance, or  
 ' Provision whatsoever to the Contrary in  
 ' any wise notwithstanding: And our further  
 ' Will and Pleasure is, and we do by these  
 ' Presents, for Us, our Heirs and Succes-  
 ' sors, Ordaine, and straightly Charge and  
 ' Command, that whensoever, and as often  
 ' as any of the Churches, Parsonages, Vica-  
 ' rages, Chapels, and other Spiritual Li-  
 ' vings, (the Advowsons, Patronages, or  
 ' Donations, whereof are hereby meant or  
 ' mentioned to be licensed to be given by  
 ' the said *Thomas Sutton*, to the said Go-  
 ' vernors and their Successors for and to-  
 ' wards the Maintenance of the said Godly  
 ' and Charitable Uses) shall happen to be

Spiritual  
 Livings  
 becoming  
 Void, to  
 be given  
 and be-  
 stowed by  
 the Dis-  
 cretion of  
 the Go-  
 vernors.

' Voide, or become Presentative or Pre-  
 ' sentable, or to be given, or collated unto  
 ' by Reason of the Death, Resignation, or  
 ' Deprivation of any Incumbent or Incum-  
 ' bents of them, or of any of them, or by  
 ' any other Means whatsoever. That then,  
 ' and so often the said Governors for the  
 ' Time being, and their Successors, or the  
 ' greater Part of them for the Time being,  
 ' shall present, preferr, and collate there-  
 ' unto such meete and sufficient Persons  
 ' as they shall think fit. Nevertheless our  
 ' full Meaning and Direction in this Be-  
 ' half is, and so we do by these Presents,  
 ' for Us, our Heirs, and Successors, Or-  
 ' dain, and Declare, that such, and so ma-  
 ' ny of the Schollars, which shall from  
 ' Time to Time be brought up, and taught  
 ' in the said Hospitall, and every of them  
 ' as shall after be fully qualified and become  
 ' Meete to take upon them, or any of them,  
 ' the Charge of the said Churches, Recto-  
 ' ries, Parsonages, Vicarages, Chapels, and  
 ' other Spiritual Livings aforesaid, shall, as  
 ' near as may be, from Time to Time, be  
 ' by the said Governors and their Succes-  
 ' sors, presented, preferred, and collated  
 ' thereunto before any other Person or Per-  
 ' sons whatsoever, avoiding as much as may  
 ' be

Gover-  
 nors  
 charged to  
 give and  
 bestow the  
 Spiritual  
 Livings  
 upon such  
 Schollars  
 as are  
 taught and  
 brought  
 up in the  
 Hospitall.

' be the giving of more Benefices then one  
 ' to any one Incumbent: And to the End  
 ' that all Suspicion of indirect Dealing,  
 ' which might hereafter be used or put in  
 ' Practice by the aforesaid Governors or their  
 ' Successors, or any of them, Contrary to  
 ' the True Intent and Meaning of these  
 ' Presents, may be prevented and taken  
 ' away, our Will and Pleasure is, and We  
 ' do by these Presents, for Us, our Heirs,  
 ' and Successors Ordain, and streightly  
 ' Charge and Command, that the Man-  
 ' ners, Lands, Tenements, and Heredita-  
 ' ments, and other Things which at any  
 ' Time hereafter shall be given, granted,  
 ' or conveyed for the Maintenance of the  
 ' said Godly and Charitable Uses before in  
 ' these Presents mentioned, nor any Part  
 ' or Parcel of them, or of any of them,  
 ' shall at any Time hereafter be by the said  
 ' Governors, or their Successors, or any of  
 ' them, leased, demised, granted, or con-  
 ' veyed to them the said Governors, or their  
 ' Successors, or to any of them, or to any  
 ' other Person and Persons whatsoever, for  
 ' or to the Use, Benefit, or Behoof of the  
 ' said Governors, or of their Successors, or  
 ' any of them, although exprefs mention  
 ' of the clear yearly Value and Certainty of

Governors for-  
bidden to  
have any  
Leases of  
any the  
Lands or  
Tene-  
ments be-  
longing to  
the Hof-  
pitall.

‘ the Premises, or any of them, or of any o-  
 ‘ ther Gifts or Grants by Us or any of Our  
 ‘ progenitors or Predecessors to the aforesaid  
 ‘ *Thomas Sutton* heretofore made, is not  
 ‘ made, or any Statute, Act, Ordinance,  
 ‘ Provision, Proclamation, or Restraint to  
 ‘ the Contrary hereof had, made, ordained  
 ‘ or provided, or any other Thing, Cause,  
 ‘ or Matter whatsoever in any wise not-  
 ‘ withstanding: In Witness whereof, We  
 ‘ have caused these our Letters to be made  
 ‘ Patents, Witness our Self at *W<sup>st</sup>minster*,  
 ‘ the two and twentieth Day of *June*, in  
 ‘ the ninth Year of our Reign of *England*,  
 ‘ *France*, and *Ireland*, and of *Scotland* the  
 ‘ four and fortieth.

*Per Breve de privato Sigillo.*

Thus was the Place finally settled by Mr.  
*Sutton* for his Foundation, and he design-  
 ed, if it should please God to continue his  
 Life and Health, to compleat the whole  
 with all convenient Speed, and to be him-  
 self (I have it from Honourable Authority  
 now living, says Mr. *Burrell*) the first Ma-  
 ster of the Hospital; but God in his wise  
 Providence had determined otherwise, and

soon after visited Mr. *Sutton* with a lingering Fever, so that perceiving himself to draw near his End, he hastened, and by a Deed dated the 30th of *October* 1611, nominated the Reverend *John Hutton*, A. M. Vicar of *Littlebury* in *Essex*, to be the first Master of the Hospitall; and on the First of *November* 1611 signed an irrevocable Deed of Gift of the Estates specified in the Letters Patents to the Governors, in trust for the Hospitall; and on the Second of *November* 1611, made his Last Will and Testament, which he signed and sealed the Twenty-eighth of *November* 1611, and declared to be his Last Will and Testament the same Day, in the Presence of *John Law*, *Leonard Houghton*, *Alexander Longworth*, *Thomas Hall*, *Richard Pearce*, and *Thomas Johnson*; and again declared the same before Sir *John Crooke*, one of the Justices of the *King's-Bench* on the First of *December*, and on the Fourth of *December*, before *Henry Thoresby* Esq; a Master in Chancery, and one of the Governors of the Hospitall by the Letters Patents, and on the Twelfth of *December* following, Mr. *Sutton* added a Codicil to his Will, chiefly to bequeath to Mr. Justice *Crooke*, and Mr. *Thoresby* 10*l.* each, for the

the Trouble he had given them in declaring his Will before them ; and to Mr. *Hutton*, the Master of the Hospitall, the next Presentation to the Rectory of *Dunstable* in *Lincolnshire* ; and soon after, his Fever increasing, Mr. *Sutton* breathed out his pious Soul into the Hands of his Creator, at his House at *Hackney* near *London*, on the said Twelfth of *December* 1611, aged 79 Years.

To these Good and Great Purposes lived, and thus died Mr. *Thomas Sutton*, and was gathered to his Fathers in a good old Age, and as a Shock of Corn cometh in in its Season.

As to his Person, Mr. *Sutton* is delivered down to us to have been of a strong and compact Body, and of a middle Stature, with a good Complexion, and an agreeable Mein ; neither nice, nor negligent in his Apparel, but modest and clean ; and to have enjoyed a general good State of Health, untill by the necessary Decays of Nature, the Infirmities of old Age broke in upon it.

*And*

And as to his great Estate, these  
are the Particulars thereof.

**I**N *Cambridgeshire*,

The Mannors of *Balsbam.*  
of *Castle-Camps.*

In *Effex*, The Mannors of *Southminster.*  
of *Hallingbury-*  
[*Bouchers.*  
of *Cold Norton.*  
of *Much Stam-*  
[*bridge.*

In *Lincolnshire*, The Mannors of *Dunsby.*  
of *Buslingthorp.*

In *Wiltshire*, The Mannors of *Salthrop.*  
of *Blackgrove.*  
of *Chilton.*  
of *Elcombe.*  
of *Wattlefcote.*  
of *Uffcot.*

In *Middlesex*, A Messuage and Lands in  
[*Hackney* and *Tottenham.*

No exact Rentall of these Lands of  
that Time is now to be found; but if  
we will take the Word of Lord Chief  
Justice *Coke*, a Feoffee, and a Chief Direc-  
tor of the Foundation of the Hospital,  
these Lands, now Part of its Possessions, pro-  
duced then, *per Annum* — — 3500*l.*  
and

and it is presumed,

In *Essex*, The Mannors of *Littlebury*,  
and of *Hadstock*.

bequeathed to the Earl of *Suffolk* on the  
Payment of 10000*l*.

In *Lancashire*, The Mannor of *Tarbocke*,  
and the Improprate Rectory of *Huyton*.  
left by Mr. *Sutton* to descend to his Heir  
at Law, and which Cost 9300*l*.

In *Lincolnshire*, The Improprate Rec-  
tory of *Glentham*,  
a Lease bequeathed to the Poor of the City  
of *Lincoln*.

In *Yorkshire*, Lands in *Cottingham*,  
a Lease bequeathed to the Poor of the  
Town of *Beverly*, may be computed to  
have produced *per Annum*. — — 1500*l*.

And then Mr. *Sutton's* Estate in Land  
in the Year of his Death will amount to *per*  
*Annum*. — — — 5000*l*.

|                            |            |            |            |
|----------------------------|------------|------------|------------|
| To which if we add, Paid   | <i>l</i> . | <i>s</i> . | <i>d</i> . |
| for <i>Charter-house</i> . | 13000      | 0          | 0          |

|                            |       |   |   |
|----------------------------|-------|---|---|
| Received from the Perso- } |       |   |   |
| nal Estate. - - - - }      | 47410 | 9 | 9 |

Executors  
Accounts.  
*Chart.*  
*Evid.*  
*House.*

We have a View of Mr. *Sutton's* great  
Fortune.

|                               |       |   |   |
|-------------------------------|-------|---|---|
| In Land <i>per Annum</i> . -- | 5000  | 0 | 0 |
| Total in Money. --            | 60410 | 9 | 9 |

And



And it is thought this may be affirmed with Truth to have been the greatest Estate in the Possession of any private Gentleman 'till these Times, when the *Indian* Wealth dispersed through Europe, the Publick Funds Paper Credit, and other Modern Methods have given some Persons Opportunities of amassing Prodigious Riches.




T H E



THE  
 Last WILL  
 AND  
 TESTAMENT  
 OF  
*Thomas Sutton Esq;*

---

CHAP. IV.


 In the Name of God, Amen.  
 The Second Day of *November*,  
 in the year of our Lord God,  
 One thousand six hundred and  
 eleven, I *Thomas Sutton* of *Camps Castle*,  
 in

in the County of *Cambridge* Esquire, being weak in Body, and of good and perfect Mind and Memory, thanks be given to Almighty God for the same; do make and declare this my Last Will and Testament in Mannor and Form following; that is to say, First, and principally, I commend my Soul into the Hands of Almighty God, trusting through his Mercy, and by the precious Death and Passion of my Saviour and Redeemer Jesus Christ to be saved, and to inherit the Kingdom of Heaven for ever. And my Body I Will to be buried where, and in what sort it shall seem meet and convenient to mine Executor or Executors, and Supervisor or Supervisors of this my last Will and Testament, with the least Pomp and Charge that may be.

*Item*, I give to every one of the Children of *Richard Coxe*, late Bishop of *Ely*, who shall be living at the Time of my Death, ten Pounds apiece, of lawful Money of *England*.

*Item*, I give to the Children of *Eleanor Aske*, late Wife of *Robert Aske*, of *Aughton* in the County of *York*, Esquire, the Sum of one hundred Pounds of good  
and

‘ and lawful Money of *England*, to be  
‘ equally distributed amongst them.

‘ *Item*, I give to the poor Town of *Ber-*  
‘ *wick upon Tweed*, one hundred Marks of  
‘ lawful Money of *England*, to be distri-  
‘ buted amongst the Poor there, by the Dis-  
‘ cretion of the chief Governor and Prea-  
‘ cher there for the Time being, to be paid  
‘ within one Year after my Decease.

‘ Also I give to *Andrew Westwood's* Wife,  
‘ of *Newcastle upon Tyne*, or to her Chil-  
‘ dren, or to so many of them as shall be  
‘ living at my Death, ten Pounds, to be  
‘ bestowed equally amongst them.

‘ And I give to the poor People of *Stoke-*  
‘ *Newington*, in the County of *Middlesex*,  
‘ ten Pounds to be distributed by the Con-  
‘ stables, Church-wardens, and Parson of  
‘ the same Town for the Time being, to  
‘ the most needy People there.

‘ Also I give to Mr. *Gray*, dwelling in  
‘ *Yorkshire*, sometimes Servant to *Ambrose*  
‘ Earl of *Warwick*, or to his Children, if any  
‘ of them be living at my Decease, forty  
‘ Pounds of good and lawful Money of  
‘ *Eng-*

‘ *England*, to be distributed equally amongst them within six Months after my Decease.

‘ Also I give to the Children of my Aunt *White*, or to so many of them, as shall be living at my Decease, one hundred Marks, to be equally distributed amongst them, within six Months next after my Decease.

‘ Also I give to *William Cocket*, Son to *William Cocket* late Alderman of the City of *Lincoln*, one hundred Pounds of lawful Money of *England*.

‘ Also I give to the Children of *John Copeland*, late of *Skillingthorp* in the County of *Lincoln*, or to so many of them as shall be living at the Time of my Decease, one hundred Pounds of lawful Money of *England*, to be equally distributed amongst them, saving unto *Elizabeth Copeland*; for my Meaning is, that she shall not have any Part of the said Legacy of one hundred Pounds.

‘ And unto the said *Elizabeth Copeland*, I give the Sum of one hundred Pounds

‘ of lawful Money of *England*, to be paid  
 ‘ unto her at the Day of her Marriage, or  
 ‘ within one Year after my Decease.

‘ *Item*, I give unto *Jane Upton*, one of  
 ‘ the Daughters of *Elizabeth Upton*, late  
 ‘ Wife of *Hamond Upton* of *Wainfleet* in  
 ‘ the County of *Lincoln* Esquire, the Sum  
 ‘ of fifty Pounds of lawful Money of *Eng-*  
 ‘ *land*.

‘ And to every other of the Children of  
 ‘ the said *Elizabeth*, who shall be living at  
 ‘ the Time of my Decease, twenty Pounds  
 ‘ apiece of lawful Money of *England*, to  
 ‘ be paid within six Months next after my  
 ‘ Decease.

‘ Also I give to the Children of one *Skel-*  
 ‘ *ton*, late of *Lowth* in the County of *Lin-*  
 ‘ *coln*, and sometimes towards the *Henne-*  
 ‘ *ages* of *Heniton* in the said County, ten  
 ‘ Pounds, to be equally divided amongst  
 ‘ them.

‘ *Item*, I give to the Children of *Tho-*  
 ‘ *mas Pynner*, late of *Micham* in the  
 ‘ County of *Surry* Esquire, or to so many  
 ‘ of them as shall be living at my Decase,  
 ‘ twenty

‘ twenty Pounds, to be equally distributed  
‘ amongst them.

‘ *Item*, I give to the Children of *Henry*  
‘ *Tutty*, late Gunner in *Berwick*, or to so  
‘ many of them as shall be living at my  
‘ Decease, ten Pounds of lawfull Money of  
‘ *England*, to be equally distributed amongst  
‘ them.

‘ Also I give to my Neice *Elizabeth*  
‘ *Allen*, two hundred Pounds of lawful  
‘ Money of *England*. And to every of her  
‘ Children which shall be living at my De-  
‘ cease, one hundred Marks apiece.

‘ *Item*, I give to *Simon Baxter*, if he be  
‘ living at my Decease, three hundred Pounds  
‘ of lawful Money of *England*, if not,  
‘ then I give the same Sum to his Child,  
‘ or Children, to be equally divided amongst  
‘ them.

‘ *Item*, I give unto *Francis Baxter*, if  
‘ he be living at my Decease, five hundred  
‘ Marks of lawful Money of *England*, if  
‘ not, I give the same Sum to his Child, or  
‘ Children, to be equally divided amongst  
‘ them.

‘ *Item*, I give unto each of my Serving  
 ‘ Men, to whom I give Wages, with my  
 ‘ Cook, that shall be alive at my Decease,  
 ‘ thirteen pounds, fix Shillings and eight-  
 ‘ pence, over and above their Wages then  
 ‘ due.

‘ *Item*, I give to so many of my Maid-  
 ‘ Servants, as I have in my House at the  
 ‘ Time of my Decease, five Marks apiece,  
 ‘ over and above their Wages.

‘ *Item*, I give unto the Children of  
 ‘ *Reynold Tomps* my late Servant, if any  
 ‘ of them be alive at my Death, ten Pounds,  
 ‘ to be distributed amongst them.

‘ *Item*, I give to the Fishermen of the  
 ‘ Town of *Ostend* in the Low Countries,  
 ‘ one hundred Pounds of lawful *English*  
 ‘ Money to be given and distributed a-  
 ‘ mongst the Poorest Fishermen of that  
 ‘ Town, or for want of a competent Num-  
 ‘ ber of them, to call in some other of that  
 ‘ Town to have a Share of the said one  
 ‘ hundred Pounds, by the Discretion of the  
 ‘ Governor of that Town and his Assistants,  
 ‘ and the Parson and Minister there for the  
 ‘ Time



‘ Time being, the same to be paid within  
‘ one Year after my Decease.

‘ *Item*, I give towards the mending of the  
‘ Highways between *Islington* and *Newing-*  
‘ *ton*, in the County of *Middlesex*, twenty-  
‘ six Pounds thirteen Shillings and Four-  
‘ pence of lawful Money of *England*, to  
‘ be imployed and bestowed by the good  
‘ oversight of mine Executor, or Executors,  
‘ the Constable of *Newington* and the  
‘ Church-wardens there for the Time being,  
‘ the same Highways to be amended, made,  
‘ and holpen within one Year after my De-  
‘ cease.

‘ *Item*, I give towards the Amending of  
‘ the High-ways between *Ashden* and *Wal-*  
‘ *den* in the County of *Essex*, called *Wal-*  
‘ *den-Lane*, one hundred Pounds of lawful  
‘ Money of *England*; and towards amend-  
‘ ing the Highways between *Great Lynton*  
‘ in the County of *Cambridge*, and the said  
‘ Town of *Walden*, threescore and six  
‘ Pounds thirteen Shillings and Four-pence  
‘ of lawful Money of *England*; and I also  
‘ give towards the amending of *Horsbeath-*  
‘ *Lane*, threescore pounds of lawful Money  
‘ of *England*.

‘ All these Works next before recited,  
 ‘ I will shall be overseen and guided by  
 ‘ the two head Constables thereunto next  
 ‘ adjoining, the Treasurer of *Walden*, and  
 ‘ the Parsons of *Ashden*, *Hadstock*, and  
 ‘ *Horsheath*, and the Constables of the  
 ‘ same Parishes for the Time being; and  
 ‘ the same several Sums to be employed,  
 ‘ and the said Highways so to be amended,  
 ‘ so far as the same Sums will extend, with-  
 ‘ in one Year after my Decease.

‘ Also I give towards the amending of the  
 ‘ Bridges, and the ordinary Highways be-  
 ‘ tween *Southminster* and *Maldon* in the  
 ‘ said County of *Essex*, the Sum of one  
 ‘ hundred Pounds of lawful Money of  
 ‘ *England*, and the same Work to be over-  
 ‘ seen and guided by the two head Con-  
 ‘ stables thereunto next adjoining, and the  
 ‘ Parsons or Vicars of *Southminster* and  
 ‘ *Maldon* for the Time being, and the same  
 ‘ Money to be so employed, and the High-  
 ‘ ways so amended, within one Year after  
 ‘ my Decease.

‘ *Item*, I give to Mr. *Robert Dudley*,  
 ‘ Alderman of *Newcastle upon Tyne*, or to  
 ‘ his Children, or to so many of his Chil-  
 ‘ dren



*An Historical Account*

‘ provided as before, that none have or  
 ‘ continue the said hundred Pounds so ap-  
 ‘ pointed above one Year.

‘ *Item*, I Will and give to the Children  
 ‘ of *Justinian Crome*, Draper, sometimes  
 ‘ dwelling in the City of *Lincoln*, or to his  
 ‘ Childrens Children, if any of them shall  
 ‘ be living at my Decease, twenty Pounds  
 ‘ of lawful Money of *England*, to be equal-  
 ‘ ly divided amongst them.

‘ I give also to the Wife and Children  
 ‘ or Child of *Martin Wathersine*, Dutch-  
 ‘ man, sometime dwelling at the Sign of  
 ‘ the *White-Bear* in *Buttolph-Lane*, *Lon-*  
 ‘ *don*, if any of them be living at the Time  
 ‘ of my Death, ten Pounds, to be equally  
 ‘ divided amongst them.

‘ *Item*, I give to the next Kinsman or  
 ‘ Kinswoman of *Henry Vavering*, Dutch-  
 ‘ man, Smith, sometimes dwelling in *Ber-*  
 ‘ *wick*, three Pounds, six Shillings, Eight-  
 ‘ pence.

‘ *Item*, I give and bequeath unto Sir  
 ‘ *Francis Popham* Knight, out of Re-  
 ‘ spect and good Will which I bear unto his  
 ‘ Wife,

Wife, being the Daughter of my late de-  
 ceased dear Wife, the Sum of two thou-  
 sand Marks of lawful Money of *England*,  
 upon Condition nevertheless, and so that  
 the said Sir *Francis Popham*, and the said  
 Lady *Ann* his Wife, give a sufficient Dis-  
 charge and a general Release to mine Ex-  
 ecutor or Executors, as well for that Sum,  
 as also for the Receipt of all the rest of  
 her Part of Portion of the Plate, Money  
 and Household Stuff already paid, and de-  
 livered to them or to their Use, as appear-  
 eth by several Bills or Notes subscribed  
 with my own Hand, which I do think to  
 be the very True half, and better half of  
 the said Plate, Money and Household-stuff,  
 Part whereof was delivered by one *John*  
*Fishborne*, my late Servant, to Sir *John*  
*Popham* Knight, late Lord Chief Justice  
 of *England*, at his late House in *Chan-*  
*cery-Lane*. The rest of the Household-stuff,  
 as Chairs, Stools, Bedsteads, Kitching-  
 stuff, Tables, and such like, was delivered  
 by the said *Fishborne* to the said Sir *John*  
*Popham's* Servants at *Newington*, one  
 thousand Pounds in Money paid in this  
 Sort, *viz.* To Sir *John Popham*, by his  
 Servant *Straker*, upon the said Sir *John's*  
 Bill before Marriage three hundred Pounds,  
 which

‘ which Bill after the Marriage I returned  
 ‘ to the said Sir *John Popham*; seven hun-  
 ‘ dred Pounds were paid to the said Sir  
 ‘ *John Popham* upon the Marriage by one  
 ‘ Mr. *Anthony Law*; late dwelling in *Pa-*  
 ‘ *ter-noster-row, London*; the better Moiety  
 ‘ of the Plate due to Sir *Francis Popham*,  
 ‘ was by the Appointment of the said Sir  
 ‘ *John Popham*, received by one Mr. *Clark*,  
 ‘ sometimes towards the said Sir *John*, and  
 ‘ now a Counsellor at the Law of the  
 ‘ *Middle-Temple* as I guess.

‘ *Item*, I give to my well beloved Friend  
 ‘ *Amy Popham*, two hundred Pounds to be  
 ‘ paid to her at the Day of her Marriage,  
 ‘ or when she shall accomplish the Age of  
 ‘ eighteen Years.

‘ *Item*, I give to *Francis Popham, Ma-*  
 ‘ *ry Popham, Elizabeth Popham, Jane*  
 ‘ *Popham* and *Ann Popham*, all Daughters  
 ‘ of the said Lady *Ann Popham*, one hundred  
 ‘ Pounds apiece; which several Sums I Will,  
 ‘ shall be paid them at the Days of their  
 ‘ Marriage, or when they shall accomplish  
 ‘ the Age of eighteen Years: And my Will  
 ‘ and Meaning is, that unless the said Sir  
 ‘ *Francis Popham*, and the said Lady *Ann*  
 ‘ his Wife, do or shall give to mine Exe-  
 ‘ cutor

' ecutor, or Executors, a general Acquit-  
 ' tance or Release to the Effect above-  
 ' mentioned, that then, as well the said  
 ' Legacy of two thousand Marks so willed  
 ' to be given to the said Sir *Francis Pop-*  
 ' *ham*, and the Lady *Ann* his Wife, as al-  
 ' so the other several Legacies given and  
 ' bequeathed to every of the said Children  
 ' of the said Sir *Francis Popham*, and the  
 ' Lady *Ann* his Wife, shall remain and be  
 ' to the Use of mine Executor, or Executors,  
 ' to be wholly disposed and given by them  
 ' within one Year after my Decease, part-  
 ' ly to the amending of High-ways, and  
 ' partly to poor Maidens Marriages, and  
 ' partly to the releasing of poor Men that  
 ' lie in Prison for Debt, and partly to the  
 ' poor People of mine intended Hospital,  
 ' when it shall please God that it shall be  
 ' established and erected. And whereas per-  
 ' haps it is or may be supposed that the said  
 ' Sir *John Popham* hath paid three hun-  
 ' dred Pounds to Sir *Rowland Hayward* of  
 ' the City of *London*, Alderman, as a Debt  
 ' due unto him upon the Bonds of *John*  
 ' *Dudley* and *Thomas Dudley*, I protest  
 ' before God that I paid the whole three  
 ' hundred Pounds to the said Sir *John*  
 ' *Popham*, in this sort to be paid over to  
 ' the

‘ the said Sir *Rowland Hayward*, viz. two  
 ‘ hundred Pounds by my Servant *John*  
 ‘ *Fishborne*, and one hundred Pounds by  
 ‘ one *Henry Best* Scrivener, near *Temple-*  
 ‘ *Bar*. There was a Demand made by Al-  
 ‘ derman *Ducket’s* Executors, for four hun-  
 ‘ dred Pounds owing to the said Alderman  
 ‘ upon the Bonds of *John Dudley* and  
 ‘ *Thomas Dudley* for Copper, for the Use  
 ‘ of the Earl of *Leicester*, which the  
 ‘ said Earl transported into *Spain*, which  
 ‘ Debt was paid to the said Alderman. For  
 ‘ I my self was a Messenger from the said  
 ‘ Earl to the said Alderman, to let him un-  
 ‘ derstand that Mr. *Bainham*, my Lord’s  
 ‘ special Officer and Receiver, should dis-  
 ‘ charge them presently; and after it was  
 ‘ discharged, the said Alderman demanded  
 ‘ Interest for the forbearing of the 400 *l*.  
 ‘ which, as I remember, *Thomas Dudley*  
 ‘ discharged: Mr. *Justice Owen*, as I Re-  
 ‘ member, who had the Doing in the Tes-  
 ‘ tament of Alderman *Ducket*, promised to  
 ‘ deliver in the said Bond to Sir *John Pop-*  
 ‘ *ham*, then being Attorney, which I do  
 ‘ believe he did: And whereas Mr. *John*  
 ‘ *Gardiner*, Brother to my late Wife, by  
 ‘ his last Will and Testament, did give un-  
 ‘ to *Anne Dudley*, now Wife to Sir *Fran-*  
 ‘ *cis*



‘ *cis Popham*, one hundred Pounds to be  
 ‘ paid to her at the Day of her Marriage  
 ‘ the same hundred Pounds was and is paid  
 ‘ by me, at or before the Day of her Mar-  
 ‘ riage, *viz.* In a Chain of Gold, being  
 ‘ fourscore and seventeen Pounds, ten Shil-  
 ‘ lings in Gold, and for the Fashion paid  
 ‘ to Master *Padmore* Goldsmith in *London*,  
 ‘ fifty Shillings, which compleats the hun-  
 ‘ dred Pounds, for the which, amongst o-  
 ‘ ther Things which I delivered in Trust, I  
 ‘ have no Acquaintance.

‘ *Item*, I give to Mr. *Jeffery Nightin-*  
 ‘ *gale* Esquire, the Sum of forty Pounds of  
 ‘ of lawful Money of *England*.

‘ Also I give to my Cosen *William Staple-*  
 ‘ *ton*, Son of Sir *Richard Stapleton* Knight,  
 ‘ one hundred Marks.

‘ *Item*, I give unto the Children of Sir  
 ‘ *Francis Willoughby* Knight, one hundred  
 ‘ Pounds of lawful Money of *England*, to  
 ‘ be equally distributed amongst them.

‘ *Item*, I give unto *John Law*, one of  
 ‘ the Procurators of the Arches, *London*,  
 ‘ two hundred Pounds.

‘ And

‘ And to Mr. *Thomas Brown*, ten  
‘ Pounds to make him a Ring.

‘ *Item*, I give to the Wife and Children  
‘ of *John Gardiner*, my late Wife’s Ne-  
‘ phew, if they be living after my Decease,  
‘ being the Mother and two Sons, two  
‘ hundred Marks, to be equally divided a-  
‘ mongst them.

‘ *Item*, I give to the poor People of  
‘ *Hadstock*, to be distributed amongst them  
‘ by the Church-wardens and Constables  
‘ there for the Time being, twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to the poor People of  
‘ *Littlebury*, and to the poor People of  
‘ *Balsbam* to be distributed as afore, to ei-  
‘ ther Town, twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to the Parson and Church-  
‘ wardens of *Balsbam* afore said, for the  
‘ Time being, to buy a Bell withal, to be  
‘ hanged up in the Steeple, to amend the  
‘ Ring there, twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, To the poor of *Southminster*,  
‘ twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*,

‘ *Item*, to the Poor of *Little Hallingbury*, twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, to the Poor of *Dunsby*, in the County of *Lincoln*, twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to *Robert Wright*, Poulterer, of *Little Hallingbury*, five Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to Widow *Aske*, late Wife of *Robert Aske* of *London*, Goldsmith, twenty Pounds which she oweth me.

‘ *Item*, My will and meaning is, that there shall no Interest or Increase for Money be taken after my Decease, so as he or they by whom any Sums of Money are or shall be owing, do pay the principal Debt within one half Year next after my Decease.

‘ *Item*, I give and bequeath to the Poor Prisoners within the Prisons of *Ludgate*, *Newgate*, the two Compters in *London*, the *King's-Bench* and the *Marshalsea*, the Sum of two hundred Pounds, to be paid and divided among the same Prisoners by even and equal Portions.

‘ *Item*,

‘ *Item*, I give to *Susan Price*, at the  
 ‘ Day of her Marriage, forty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to one *Collins*, of the Town  
 ‘ of *Cursal* in *Essex*, five pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to my good Friends, Mrs.  
 ‘ *Heyward* and Mrs. *Law*, either of them,  
 ‘ ten Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to *Margaret Woodhal*, my  
 ‘ God-daughter, the Sum of twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to all other my God-  
 ‘ Children, five Pounds apiece.

‘ *Item*, I give and bequeath to the Ma-  
 ‘ ster and Fellows, as the Corporation of  
 ‘ *Jesus Colledge* in *Cambridge*, the Sum of  
 ‘ five hundred Marks of lawful Money of  
 ‘ *England*, to be imployed, used, and be-  
 ‘ stowed for or in some Perpetuity, for and  
 ‘ to the Use, Benefit, and Behalf of the  
 ‘ said Colledge, Master, Fellows, and Schol-  
 ‘ lars, in such Sort, Mannor and Form as  
 ‘ by the Discretion of the Bishop of *Ely* for  
 ‘ the Time being, the Vice-Chancellor of  
 ‘ *Cambridge* for the Time being, the Ma-  
 ‘ ster

‘ster and Fellows of the said Colledge for  
 ‘the Time being, and my Executors here-  
 ‘after named, or the Survivor or Survivors  
 ‘of them, if they be living when the be-  
 ‘stowing of the said Sum shall come in  
 ‘Question, shall be thought best and most  
 ‘convenient.

‘*Item*, I give and bequeath to the Ma-  
 ‘ster and Fellows, as the Corporation of  
 ‘*Magdalen* Colledge in *Cambridge*, the  
 ‘Sum of five hundred Pounds, to be im-  
 ‘ployed, used, or bestowed for or in some  
 ‘Perpetuity, for and to the Use, Benefit,  
 ‘and Behalf of the said Colledge, Master  
 ‘and Fellows, and Schollars there, in such  
 ‘Sort, Manner and Form as by the Dis-  
 ‘cretion, Privity, and Consent of the Vice-  
 ‘Chancellor in *Cambridge* for the Time  
 ‘being, the Master of *Trinity* Colledge  
 ‘in *Cambridge* for the Time being, and the  
 ‘Master and Fellows of the said *Magdalen*  
 ‘Colledge for the Time being, shall be  
 ‘thought best and most convenient.

‘And I will that my great Chain of  
 ‘Gold, and all my Jewels of what kind  
 ‘soever they be, shall be sold by mine Ex-  
 ‘ecutors and Supervisors hereafter named,

‘ towards the better and speedier Payment of  
 ‘ my Legacies, and Performance of this my  
 ‘ last Will and Testament.

‘ And my Will and Meaning is, that  
 ‘ all the Legacies by me in this my Testa-  
 ‘ ment and last Will given and bequeathed,  
 ‘ and for the Payment of much whereof  
 ‘ there is no certain Time set down, shall  
 ‘ be paid within two Years next after my  
 ‘ Decease at the furthest.

‘ Also I give for and towards the Build-  
 ‘ ing of mine intended Hospital, Chappel,  
 ‘ and School-house, the Sum of five thou-  
 ‘ sand Pounds, if I do not live to see it  
 ‘ performed in my Life time.

‘ And I desire, in the Name of God, my  
 ‘ Feoffees, and my Executor or Executors,  
 ‘ within two Years after my Decease, or  
 ‘ sooner if they may conveniently (if it  
 ‘ please not God I live to see and cause the  
 ‘ same my Determination to be performed  
 ‘ and accomplished) to see and cause the  
 ‘ same to be performed and accomplished.

‘ Also I give the Residue of the Years  
 ‘ which I shall have at the Time of my De-  
 ‘ cease

‘ cease in one Close called the *Withies*, ly-  
 ‘ ing within the Town and Fields of *Cot-*  
 ‘ *tingham*, in the County of *York*, to the  
 ‘ Mayor and Aldermen of *Beverly*, or to  
 ‘ the Governor of the same Town and his  
 ‘ Assistants for the Time being, to this End  
 ‘ and Purpose, That they shall distribute,  
 ‘ or cause to be distributed, the yearly Profit  
 ‘ arising of the same over and above the  
 ‘ yearly Rent payable to the King’s most  
 ‘ excellent Majesty, amongst the poorest  
 ‘ People dwelling within the said Town of  
 ‘ *Beverly*.

‘ Also I give to the Mayor and Alder-  
 ‘ men of the City of *Lincoln* for the Time  
 ‘ being, all such Profits and Revenues as  
 ‘ shall arise and grow of the Parsonage of  
 ‘ *Glentham*, within the County of *Lin-*  
 ‘ *coln*, and all the Residue of the Years that  
 ‘ shall remain after my Decease, to this  
 ‘ Intent, that they shall distribute and be-  
 ‘ stow, or cause to be distributed, and be-  
 ‘ stowed the same, amongst twenty of the  
 ‘ poorest People that shall then be dwel-  
 ‘ ling in the said City, with the Consent  
 ‘ and Privy of the Dean of the Cathe-  
 ‘ dral Church of *Lincoln*, or the Recorder  
 ‘ of the same for the Time being, (they the

*An Historical Account*

‘ said Mayor, Aldermen, Dean, and Recorder, foreseeing that the Parsonage be-  
 ‘ letten for their most Benefit.)

‘ *Item*, I give into the Treasury or Store-  
 ‘ house of mine intended Hospital, to be-  
 ‘ gin their Stock with, and to defend the  
 ‘ Rights of the House, one thousand Pounds  
 ‘ of lawful *English* Money.

‘ And I give to every one of my Feof-  
 ‘ fees whom I have put in Trust about mine  
 ‘ intended Hospital (to whom I have not  
 ‘ given any thing in this my last Will) the  
 ‘ Sum of twenty-six Pounds, thirteen Shil-  
 ‘ lings and Four-pence of lawful *English*  
 ‘ Money.

‘ *Item*, I give to *Amy Popham*, if it  
 ‘ please God she live to keep House, three  
 ‘ Feather-beds, and so many pair of Hol-  
 ‘ land Sheets, with the Bolsters to them,  
 ‘ and so many hangings of Tapestry, as fur-  
 ‘ nish her a Bedchamber. The rest of my  
 ‘ Household-stuff I Will shall be sold by  
 ‘ mine Executors for the speedier Payment  
 ‘ of my Legacies, and Performance of this  
 ‘ my last Will.

‘ *Item*,



‘ *Item*, I give to the Widow *Tassel* of  
 ‘ *Balsam*, the Sum of five Pounds of law-  
 ‘ ful Money of *England*, and to *Thomas*  
 ‘ *Lawrence* the Elder, of the same Town,  
 ‘ five Pounds of lawful Money of *England*.

‘ *Item*, I give and bequeath unto the  
 ‘ Brother of *Percival Graung*, my late Ser-  
 ‘ vant, deceased, the Sum of twenty Pounds  
 ‘ of like lawful Money of *England*.

‘ And of this my last Will and Testa-  
 ‘ ment, I make and ordain *Richard Sut-*  
 ‘ *ton* of *London* Esquire, and *John Law*  
 ‘ one of the Procurators of the Arches,  
 ‘ *London*, my Executors, charging them,  
 ‘ as they will answer at the last Day of  
 ‘ Judgment, that they, or one of them in  
 ‘ the Absence of the other, endeavour them-  
 ‘ selves, with all Earnestness and Diligence,  
 ‘ to see this my Will performed accord-  
 ‘ ing to my True Meaning and Charitable  
 ‘ Intent.

‘ And I make Overseers of this my last  
 ‘ Will and Testament, the most Reverend  
 ‘ Father in God *George Abbot*, Arch-bishop  
 ‘ of *Canterbury*, unto whom I give and be-  
 ‘ queath

‘ queath the Sum of forty Marks of law-  
 ‘ ful Money of *England*, or a Piece of  
 ‘ Plate of that Value, at his Election and  
 ‘ Choice.

‘ And also *Launcelot Andrews* Almon-  
 ‘ zer to the King’s Majesty, my other Super-  
 ‘ visor and Overseer of this my last Will  
 ‘ and Testament, unto whom I give and  
 ‘ bequeath the Sum of twenty Pounds of  
 ‘ lawful Money of *England*, or a Piece of  
 ‘ Plate of that Value, at his Election and  
 ‘ Choice.

‘ *Item*, My Will and full Intent and  
 ‘ Meaning is, That if any Person or Per-  
 ‘ sons whosoever, to whom I have in and  
 ‘ by this my last Will and Testament given  
 ‘ and bequeathed any Legacy, or Sum or  
 ‘ Sums of Money, shall any ways gainsay,  
 ‘ impugn, contradict, or impeach this my  
 ‘ last Will and Testament, that then all and  
 ‘ every one so impugning, contradicting,  
 ‘ impeaching, or gainsaying this my last  
 ‘ Will and Testament, and every of their  
 ‘ Children and Kinsfolks to whom I have  
 ‘ in and by this my last Will and Testament  
 ‘ given and bequeathed any Legacy or Sum  
 ‘ or Sums of Money, shall have no Part nor  
 ‘ Portion

‘ Portion of any such Gift, Legacy, or Be-  
 ‘ quest, but shall utterly lose the same, and  
 ‘ be utterly barred thereof, as if no such  
 ‘ Legacy, Gift, or Bequest, had been given  
 ‘ unto him, her, or them, by this my last  
 ‘ Will and Testament (any thing before in  
 ‘ these Presents mentioned or contained to  
 ‘ the Contrary in any wise notwithstanding.)

‘ *Item*, I give and bequeath to *Richard*  
 ‘ *Sutton*, one of my Executors before  
 ‘ named, the Sum of one hundred Pounds;  
 ‘ and to Mrs. *Law* over and besides the  
 ‘ Legacy before to her given, I give the Sum  
 ‘ of forty Pounds to make her a Gown  
 ‘ withal.

‘ *Item*, I give to Master *Hutton*, the Vi-  
 ‘ car of *Littlebury*, twenty Pounds. To  
 ‘ the Town of *Camps Castle*, where I dwell,  
 ‘ to be distributed amongst the Poor of the  
 ‘ same Parish, ten Pounds.

‘ Also to the Poor of the Town of *El-*  
 ‘ *comb*, to be equally distributed amongst  
 ‘ them, the Sum of ten Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give and bequeath those my  
 ‘ Mannors of *Littlebury* and *Hadstock* in  
 ‘ the County of *Essex*, to the Right Ho-  
 ‘ nourable the Lord *Thomas Howard* Earl  
 ‘ of *Suffolk*, and to his Heirs for ever, up-  
 ‘ on Condition that he do well and truly  
 ‘ Pay, or cause to be paid to my Executors  
 ‘ before named, or to the Survivor of them,  
 ‘ the Sum of ten thousand Pounds of law-  
 ‘ ful Money of *England*, within One Year  
 ‘ next after my Decease. And if he shall  
 ‘ refuse to pay the said Sum of Ten thou-  
 ‘ sand Pounds for the said Mannors, then  
 ‘ I give and bequeath the said Mannors  
 ‘ of *Littlebury* and *Hadstock* to my said  
 ‘ Executors, and to their Heirs for ever.  
 ‘ And then I Will and Devise that the said  
 ‘ Mannors of *Littlebury* and *Hadstock* shall  
 ‘ be sold by my said Executors, or the  
 ‘ Survivor of them, to the uttermost Price  
 ‘ and Value that they may be sold for, and  
 ‘ the Money coming of the Sale thereof,  
 ‘ together with as much more as shall make  
 ‘ up the same Sum, the full Sum of twenty  
 ‘ thousand Pounds, I Will, shall be im-  
 ‘ ployed and bestowed by my said Executors,  
 ‘ or the Survivor of them, with the Advice  
 ‘ of my Supervisors aforementioned, in some  
 ‘ good Works and charitable Uses for mine  
 ‘ intended

‘ intended Hospital, and for poor People,  
 ‘ or otherwise as they in their Wifdoms  
 ‘ and Discretions shall think fit.

‘ *Item*, I give to Mr. *Flud*, Parson of  
 ‘ *Newington*, the Sum of thirteen Pounds  
 ‘ six Shillings Eight-pence. And to the  
 ‘ Wife of *Benjamin King* of *Southminster*,  
 ‘ six Pounds, thirteen Shillings, Four-pence.

‘ *Item*, I give to *Thomas Averell*, if it  
 ‘ shall be found that he hath dealt faith-  
 ‘ fully and plainly with me in my Business,  
 ‘ the Sum of ten Pounds, which he ow-  
 ‘ eth me.

‘ *Item*, I give unto the Wife of Mr. *In-  
 ‘ gry* of *Littlebury*, three Pounds, six Shil-  
 ‘ lings, Eight-pence.

‘ *Item*, I give to Sir *Henry Hubberd*,  
 ‘ Knight, the King’s Majesty’s Attorney Ge-  
 ‘ neral, a Piece of Plate of the Value of  
 ‘ ten Pounds: And to Mr. *Locksmith* his  
 ‘ Clerk, the Sum of ten Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to the Poor of the Parish  
 ‘ of *Hackney*, ten Pounds.

‘ *Item*,

‘ *Item*, I give to *Bridget Law*, the Sum  
 ‘ of ten Pounds: And to the Lady *Al-*  
 ‘ *tham*, Daughter to Mr. *Auditor Sutton*,  
 ‘ the Sum of twenty Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to Sir *Edward Phillips*,  
 ‘ Master of the Rolls, a Piece of Plate of  
 ‘ the Value of twenty Pounds: And to Sir  
 ‘ *James Altham*, one of the Barons of the  
 ‘ *Exchequer*, one Piece of Plate of the Va-  
 ‘ lue of twenty-Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to my late Wive’s Kinf-  
 ‘ man, *Guy Godolphin*, the Sum of ten  
 ‘ Pounds.

‘ *Item*, I give to the Right Honourable,  
 ‘ my very good Lord, the Earl of *Suffolk*,  
 ‘ the Sum of four hundred Pounds. All  
 ‘ the rest of my Goods, Chattels, and Debts,  
 ‘ not before given and disposed, I give and  
 ‘ bequeath to my intended Hospital, to be  
 ‘ employed and bestowed on and about the  
 ‘ same, according to the Discretion of the  
 ‘ Feoffees of my said Hospital, or the grea-  
 ‘ ter Part of them. *In Witness* hereof, I  
 ‘ have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, the  
 ‘ twenty

‘ twenty-eighth Day of the Month of No-  
‘ vember above-written.

*Thomas Sutton.*

‘ *Memorandum*, That the same Testator  
‘ did acknowledge this his Will, written  
‘ and contained in these three and twenty  
‘ Leaves, to be his last Will and Testament,  
‘ and that his Hand and Seal set thereunto,  
‘ is his own Hand and Seal, and that he  
‘ had heard it Read, and was acquainted  
‘ with the Contents of it, the said twenty-  
‘ eighth of *November* above-written, in  
‘ Presence of us, *John Law, Leonard*  
‘ *Houghton, Alexander Longworth, Tho-*  
‘ *mas Hall*, The Mark of *Richard Pearce*,  
‘ The Mark of *Thomas Johnson, Primo*  
‘ *Decembris 1611. idem recognitum per*  
‘ *Testatorem coram Jo. Crooke Quarto*  
‘ *Decembris 1611. recognit.* to be the Tes-  
‘ tator’s last Will. Before me *Henry Tho-*  
‘ *resby.*

---

*A Codicil to be annexed to the last Will and Testament of Thomas Sutton Esquire, made and declared the Day whereon he died, being the twelfth of December, one thousand six hundred and eleven.*

‘ **I**TEM, he gave and bequeathed to  
 ‘ Mr. Judge Crooke, one of the Judges  
 ‘ of the *King’s-Bench* at *Westminster*, the  
 ‘ Sum of ten Pounds. And to Mr. *Henry*  
 ‘ *Thoresby* one of the Masters of the Court  
 ‘ of *Chancery*, the like Sum of ten Pounds:  
 ‘ And to Mrs. *Sutton* of *London*, Widow,  
 ‘ the Sum of three Pounds, six Shillings,  
 ‘ Eight-pence, to make her a Ring.

‘ Also he gave to Mr. *Hutton*, Clerk  
 ‘ and Vicar of *Littlebury*, the Advowson  
 ‘ or next Presentation to the Parsonage of  
 ‘ *Dunsby* in the County of *Lincoln*.

‘ Also he did then publish and declare  
 ‘ before Mr. *Richard Flud*, Parson of *Stoke-*  
 ‘ *New-*



Newington in the County of Middlesex,  
 Robert Petit, Alexander Longworth, John  
 Parsons, and Thomas Johnson his Cook,  
 that he had made his Will, and thereof had  
 made and ordained Richard Sutton of  
 London, Esquire, and John Law, his Ex-  
 ecutors.



## C H A P. V.

*Concerning the preceeding Will of  
Mr. Sutton, and his Funeral.*

**T**HIS was this good Man's Bounteous Will, in which all who had been so Happy as to have obliged him, or to bear any Relation to him, his Friends, his Kindred, and his Servants, his poor Neighbours, and the mired Travellers, the Industrious young Man entring upon Business, and the unfortunate Old one imprisoned from it; *Jesus College*, and *Magdalene College* in *Cambridge*, the Towns of *Berwick upon Tweed*, of *Beverly* in *Yorkshire*, and of *Ostend* in the *Netherlands*, the Cities of *London* and *Lincoln*, all found a Generous Patron, and a Bounteous Friend; nay, I ought to add the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, not long before united under one Sovereign in the Person of King *James* the First, and now joined together by a Bridge at *Berwick* over the *Tweed*, at the Expence of ten thousand Pounds

Pounds out of Mr. *Sutton's* Estate, by Virtue of this his last Will, as shall be shewn at large, after having first given an Account of his Corps.

For it being judged proper to have a publick Funeral, for this mighty publick Benefactor; Mr. *Sutton's* Bowels were buried in the Parish Church of *Hackney*, and his Body embalmed remained in his own House at *Hackney* to the 28th Day of May 1612, when the Roads being good, the following Governors of the Hospital met in Assembly there, *viz.*

The Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Dr. *George Abbot*.

The Lord *Ellesmere*, Lord Chancellor.

The Lord Bishop of *London*, Dr. *John King*.

The Lord Bishop of *Ely*, Dr. *Lancelot Andrews*.

The Lord Chief Justice *Coke*.

Sir *Henry Hobart*, Attorney General.

The Dean of *St. Pauls*, Dr. *John Overal*.

The Dean of *Westminster*, Dr. *George Montaigne*.

|                             |   |               |
|-----------------------------|---|---------------|
| <i>Henry Thoresby,</i>      | } | <i>Esqrs;</i> |
| <i>Jeffery Nightingale,</i> |   |               |
| <i>Richard Sutton.</i>      |   |               |

*John*

*An Historical Account*

*John Law,* } *Gents.*  
*Thomas Browne,* }

The Master of the Hospital, The Reverend  
 Mr. *John Hutton* :

And elected the Right Honourable *Henry Howard* Earl of *Northampton*, Lord Privy Seal, and Sir *James Altham*, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, Governors of the Hospital, in the Places of *Robert Cecil* Earl of *Salisbury* Lord High Treasurer, and Sir *Thomas Foster* one of the Justices of the *Common-Pleas*, deceased ; and Mr. *Thomas Heyward*, a Gentleman much employed by Mr. *Sutton* in his Law Affairs, and whose Wife is a Legatee in Mr. *Sutton's* Will, the Register of the Hospital.

And then joining the Earl of *Northampton*, the Earl of *Suffolk*, Sir *James Altham*, Sir *John Croke*, Sir *Francis Popham*, and many other Knights and Gentlemen assembled there, after an handsome Collation, they honoured the Funeral with their Presence. The Procession was very Solemn, under the Direction of Mr. *Camden*, Clarienceux King at Arms ; an hundred old Men in black Cloaks preceeded the Corps, Mr. *Simon Baxter*, Mr. *Sutton's* only

only Sister's Eldest Son was Chief Mourner, and then followed the Lords, and Gentlemen with their Attendants all in Mourning through a vast Crowd of Spectators to *Christ-Church* adjoining to *Christ's-Hospital* in *London*, where Mr. Sutton's Corps was deposited with the Funeral Service, to be removed to *Charter-House*, when the Chapel should be finished, and a Vault and Tomb prepared for it.

The whole Funeral Expences, as appears from the Executors Accounts, amounted to two thousand, two hundred, twenty-eight Pounds, ten Shillings and Three-pence, of which the Mourning Cloth cost one thousand, three hundred, fifty-five Pounds, two Shillings and Four-pence, and the Tomb five hundred, fourteen Pounds, nineteen Shillings and Ten-pence, and there were at the Burial given to the Poor thirty Pounds.

Executors  
Acc.  
Chart.  
Evid.  
House.

*The Funeral Certificate entred by Mr. Camden in the Herald's-Office, is as follows.*

**T**HOMAS SUTTON, of *Campe-Castle* in the County of *Cambridge* Esq; married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Gardiner*, and Widow of *John Dudley*

*Dudley* of *Newington* Esq; He ended this Transitory Life the 12th of *December* 1611, leaving no Issue; his Funeral was worshipfully solemnized at *Christ-Church* in *London* the 28th of *May* next following; Mr. *Simon Baxter* chief Mourner, *William Camden* Clarencieux King at Arms, and *John Raven Richmond* Herald, attending thereat.

And now to return to the Will. I have already remarked, that the first Legacy of Mr. *Sutton* is to the Children of Dr. *Cox* Bishop of *Ely*, the worthy Patron of his Youth: And this seems likewise to have been the true Reason of his Legacy of 500 Marks to *Jesus College* in *Cambridge*, which bears a particular Relation to the Bishoprick of *Ely*, and Dr. *Duport* Son-in-Law to Bishop *Cox* was then Master thereof: *Jesus College* purchased with this Legacy the inappropriate Rectory of *Elmstead* near *Colchester* in *Essex*, and Mr. *Sutton's* Benefaction is thus recorded in Dr. *Sherman's* Manuscript Latin History of *Jesus College*.

Thomas Sutton Armiger (*Crassus ille Anglus*) Fundator Domus Hospitalis vocatæ the Charter-House Lond. Rectoriæ impro-

*impropriatam de Elmeſtead (olim Portionem Monasterii S. Oſithæ) juxta Colcheſtriam Collegio dono dedit, una cum perpetua Advocacione Vicariæ.*

And Mr. Sutton's Legacy for the Promotion of Learning to *Magdalene College* was no doubt in a great Measure, if not intirely owing to its being a *Lincolnſhire College*, the County in which Mr. Sutton was Born. This Benefaction is thus entered in that College Register.

*A. D. 1615. Thomas Sutton Esq; Founder of Sutton's Hospital in London, gave the College 500 l. towards the Purchasing an Inn in Cambridge, which with the Addition of 160 l. from the College was laid out in the Purchase of the White Bull Inn, then valued at 40 l. per Annum.*

The Lease of the Parsonage of *Glentham* was bequeathed to the Poor of the City of *Lincoln* out of Regard to his Father, who died Steward of the Courts of that City, and was buried in the Parish Church of St. *Swithin* there: And in Gratitude for this Benefaction, there is now in the publick Hall of the City of *Lincoln* a whole length Picture of Mr. Sutton, with this Inscription, *Effigies Illust: Thomæ Sutton Armigeri,*  
given

given according to the Infcription, *in 1622 by Edward Blawe Esq; at that Time Mayor, and beautified and refreshed in 1710, at the Expence of the Corporation*, whose Poor continue to be Fed to this Day out of the Parfonage of *Glenthams*.

The Copy of the Will made by Mr. *Sutton* in 1695 already mentioned will help us to Account for the Legacy of one hundred Pounds to the poor Fishermen of *Ostend*, in which are these Words, ‘ I give to the Fishermen of the Town of ‘ *Ostend* in the Low Countries in Recom- ‘ pence of two Prizes, *viz.* Fly Boats loa- ‘ den with barrel’d Cod, Salt, and other ‘ Things, which I bought at *Newcastle* up- ‘ on *Tyne*, about the sixteenth Year of the ‘ Queen’s Majesty’s (*Elizabeth*) Reign, of ‘ the Prince of *Orange*’s Captains two ‘ hundred Pounds: I desire the same Men, ‘ or their Children to have the same, if ‘ the true Owners may be found out, if ‘ not, then I Will the same two hundred ‘ Pounds to be given among the Poorest ‘ Fishermen of that Town.

*Chart.  
Evid.  
House.*

Mr. *Sutton*, it is plain from this Account came fairly by these Prizes, having bought them of the Men, that had taken them in open War, but however he was

now



now willing the poor Sufferers, if it might be, should taste of his Bounty, and have some Amends for their Loss : nor is the Sum given lessened to one hundred Pounds in his last Will on any other Account, but that *Ostend* had been lately reduced to almost an heap of Rubbish and Sand in the Famous three Years Siege thereof, and so many of the Inhabitants destroyed; that Mr. *Sutton* doubted, that there were but a very few of the poor Fishermen left, and therefore ordered, that if there should not be found a Competent Number of them to receive the hundred Pounds, some others of the poor Inhabitants should come in for Shares.

It would perhaps be thought tedious, should I proceed in explaining the very many Legacies bequeathed in this most generous and truly charitable Will.

I shall therefore next speak to the Affair about *Berwick-Bridge*, not, it is true, mentioned in Mr. *Sutton's* Will, but built by Virtue thereof.

*For the Archbishop of Canterbury, and  
the Bishop of Ely directed this Letter to  
Mr. Sutton's Executors.*

*Charter-  
House.  
Assen.  
Book A.  
P. 347.*

‘ A F T E R our hearty Commendations,  
‘ Whereas *Thomas Sutton* of *Cam-*  
‘ *pes-Castle* in the County of *Cambridge*  
‘ Esquire, by his last Will and Testament,  
‘ bearing Date the Second Day of *Novem-*  
‘ *ber*, in the Year of our Lord God, one  
‘ thousand six hundred and eleven, did give  
‘ and bequeath those his Mannors of *Little-*  
‘ *bury* and *Hadstock*, in the County of *Es-*  
‘ *sex*, to the Right Hon. the Lord *Thomas*  
‘ *Howard* Earl of *Suffolk*, and to his  
‘ Heirs for-ever, upon Condition that he  
‘ did well, and truly pay, or cause to be  
‘ paid to his Executors, or to the Survivor  
‘ of them, the Sum of ten thousand Pounds  
‘ of lawful Money of *England*, within  
‘ one Year next after his Decease; and if  
‘ the said Earl should refuse to pay the said  
‘ Sum of ten thousand Pounds for the said  
‘ Mannors; then the said Mr. *Sutton* did  
‘ give and bequeath the said Mannors to  
‘ his Executors, and to their Heirs for-ever.  
‘ And the said Mr. *Sutton* did then fur-  
‘ ther Will and Devise, that the said Man-  
‘ nors

'nors of *Littlebury* and *Hadstock* should  
 be sold by his Executors, or the Survi-  
 vor of them, to the uttermost Price and  
 Value that they might be sold for, and  
 the Money coming of the Sale thereof,  
 together with as much more as should  
 make up the same Sum the full Sum of  
 twenty thousand Pounds, the said Mr.  
*Sutton* willed, should be employed, and  
 bestowed by his Executors, or the Survi-  
 vor of them, with the Advice of his Su-  
 pervisors, in some good Works or chari-  
 table Uses for his intended Hospital, and  
 for poor People, or otherwise as they in  
 their Wisdoms and Discretion should think  
 fit. We being the Overseers of the said  
 Mr. *Sutton's* last Will and Testament, and  
 desiring nothing more than the Perfor-  
 mance thereof according to his true Intent  
 and Meaning; having advisedly considered  
 that there is not any Charitable Work (in  
 our Understandings) better for the Com-  
 mon Wealth, than the Upholding, Main-  
 taining, and Repairing of Bridges, where-  
 by his Majesty's Subjects, and all Persons  
 whatsoever, out of all Parts of his High-  
 ness's Realms of *England* and *Scotland*,  
 may daily Travel, and commerce one  
 with another. And we being given to

‘ understand that *Berwick Bridge* upon the  
 ‘ River of *Tweed*, which is the chiefest  
 ‘ Passage between both Kingdoms, is very  
 ‘ much ruined, or rather utterly decayed,  
 ‘ and will Cost a very great Sum of Mo-  
 ‘ ney (which as the Necessity of the Times  
 ‘ is, cannot otherwise well be spared to re-  
 ‘ pay it.) Do therefore (as well in Perfor-  
 ‘ mance of the Will of the said Mr. *Sut-*  
 ‘ *ton* ; as also in regard, his Majesty most  
 ‘ graciously hath been pleased to further the  
 ‘ establishing and settling of his Hospital)  
 ‘ advise and wish you, being Mr. *Sutton’s*  
 ‘ Executors, to pay unto his Majesty into the  
 ‘ Receipt of his Highness’s Exchequer, the  
 ‘ Sum of ten thousand Pounds, Parcel of  
 ‘ the said twenty thousand Pounds remain-  
 ‘ ing in your Hands, and Power to dispose  
 ‘ of, towards the repairing of the said *Ber-*  
 ‘ *wick Bridge*, which we doubt not his  
 ‘ Majesty will graciously accept, and will  
 ‘ besides redound greatly to the Benefit of  
 ‘ both Kingdoms: And even so we bid you  
 ‘ heartily farewell.

*Your very Loving Friends,*

*Lambeth the 26th*  
*of June, 1613,*

*G. Cant.*  
*La. Elien.*

And on the 8th Day of July following,  
the Executors received this Letter un-  
der the Privy Seal from his Majesty.

JAMES, by the Grace of God, King  
of England, Scotland, France, and  
Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To  
our Trusty and well beloved Richard Sut-  
ton Esquire, and John Larwe Gent. Exe-  
cutors of the last Will and Testament of  
Thomas Sutton Esquire, late of Balsbam <sup>Chart.</sup>  
in the County of Cambridge, deceased, <sup>Evid.</sup>  
<sup>House.</sup>  
Greeting.

Whereas the said Thomas Sutton, by  
his last Will and Testament, bearing Date  
the Second Day of November, in the  
Year of our Lord God 1611, did Will,  
that twenty thousand Pounds should be  
employed, or bestowed by you his Exe-  
cutors, or the Survivor of you, with the  
Advice of his Supervisors, in good Works  
or charitable Uses for his intended Hos-  
pital, and poor People, or otherwise, as  
you in your Discretion shall think fit.  
And whereas the Right Reverend Father  
in God, George Arch-Bishop of Canter-  
bury, and the Reverend Father in God,  
Lancelot Bishop of Ely, Supervisors of the  
last

‘ last Will and Testament of the said *Tho-*  
 ‘ *mas Sutton*, in Part of Performance of  
 ‘ the said last Will of the said *Thomas Sut-*  
 ‘ *ton* in that Behalf, have advised you his  
 ‘ said Executors to pay unto Us into the  
 ‘ Receipt of our Exchequer, the Sum of  
 ‘ ten thousand Pounds, Parcel of the said  
 ‘ Sum of twenty thousand Pounds towards  
 ‘ the Repairing of the Bridge of our Town  
 ‘ of *Berwick* upon *Tweed*, being very  
 ‘ much ruinated and decayed, which said  
 ‘ Sum of ten thousand Pounds, as we  
 ‘ are given to understand, you are ready  
 ‘ to pay unto Us for the Use aforesaid.  
 ‘ We hereby let you witt, that we are well  
 ‘ pleased to accept thereof accordingly, there-  
 ‘ fore hereby acknowledge our-selves satis-  
 ‘ fied and paid the said Sum of ten thou-  
 ‘ sand Pounds, and do acquit and dis-  
 ‘ charge you, and either of you, and your,  
 ‘ and either of your Heirs and Executors  
 ‘ of and for the same, and every Part there-  
 ‘ of. Given under our Privy Seal, at our  
 ‘ Palace of *Westminster* the 8th Day of *Ju-*  
 ‘ *ly*, in the eleventh Year of our Reign of  
 ‘ *England, France, and Ireland*, and of  
 ‘ *Scotland* the forty-six.

And the Tally for the Receipt of that  
 Sum was Stricken at the Exchequer the  
 16th of *July* following.

C H A P. VI.

*Of the Law Suit about the Lands  
of the Hospital.*

**I**T might, one should think, after all this Care and Pains to establish an Hospital, be reasonably concluded that good Mr. Sutton's Will therein, should effectually take Place without any Dispute. But Mr. Sutton was not laid in his Grave, before Mr. Simon Baxter, eldest Son of his Sister, and his Heir at Law, *being seduced by wicked Council*, as we shall find him acknowledging presently under his Hand, attempted by a violent Entry to take Possession of *Charter-House*, and laid Claim to the whole Estate settled on the Hospital, and petitioned the King for Justice, who commanded his Privy-Council to authorize and require Sir *Thomas Fleming* the Lord Chief Justice of the *King's-Bench*, Sir *Lawrence Tanfield*, Lord Chief Baron of the *Exchequer*, Sir *Henry Hobart* Attorney General, and Sir *Francis Bacon* Solicitor

licitor General to hear the Cause Summarily, and then to Report it to his Majesty in Council, but after some Time, it was thought fit to dismiss this Cause from the Council Board to the regular Course of Law, as appears from the following Order.

*At the Court at Greenwich the 28th of June 1612, being Sunday in the Forenoon.*

|                                       |                                     |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| L <sup>d</sup> Archb. of <i>Cant.</i> | E. of <i>Pembroke.</i>              |
| L <sup>d</sup> Chancellor.            | L <sup>d</sup> <i>Fenton.</i>       |
| L <sup>d</sup> Privy Seal             | L <sup>d</sup> <i>Zouche.</i>       |
| D. of <i>Lenox.</i>                   | L <sup>d</sup> <i>Knollis.</i>      |
| L <sup>d</sup> Admiral.               | L <sup>d</sup> <i>Wotton.</i>       |
| L <sup>d</sup> Chamberlain            | Mr. <i>Secretary Herbert</i>        |
| E. of <i>Shrewsbury.</i>              | S <sup>r</sup> <i>Jus. Caesar.</i>  |
| E. of <i>Worcester.</i>               | S <sup>r</sup> <i>Thomas Parry.</i> |

‘ *Whereas* there have been diverse De-  
 ‘ bates, and thereupon sundry Orders and  
 ‘ Letters proceeding from this Board con-  
 ‘ cerning the Cause betwixt the Executors  
 ‘ of *Thomas Sutton* Esquire deceased, and  
 ‘ *Simon Baxter* Gent. Cosen and Heir to  
 ‘ the said *Thomas Sutton*: From whence  
 ‘ by Consent of both Parties, the Matter  
 ‘ was referred to a summary Hearing unto  
 ‘ the



‘ the Lord Chief Justice of *England*, Lord  
 ‘ Chief Baron of the *Exchequer*, and his  
 ‘ Majesty’s learned Council. But this sum-  
 ‘ mary Course being afterwards found in-  
 ‘ convenient, the Business was referred to  
 ‘ an ordinary and legal Trial in his Maje-  
 ‘ sty’s Courts of Justice. It is therefore  
 ‘ thought good, and so ordered, that the  
 ‘ Cause be henceforth dismissed from fur-  
 ‘ ther handling at the Council Table, and  
 ‘ left to such Issue as the same shall set  
 ‘ down in a judicial Manner of proceeding.

*Concord cum Reg.*

G. Calvert.

Therefore on the last Day of *Trinity*  
*Term Decimo Jacobi*, Mr. *Baxter* entered  
 an Action of Trespas in the *King’s-Bench*  
 against Mr. *Sutton’s* Executors, and the  
 Governors of the Hospital; and on the  
 29th of *July* following 1612, they prefer-  
 red a Bill in *Chancery* against Mr. *Baxter*,  
 and on the 1st Day of *February* following  
 the Cause was heard in *Chancery* before  
 the Lord Chancellor *Ellesmere*, the Master  
 of the *Rolls*, the Lord Chief Justice of the  
*King’s-Bench*, the Lord Chief Baron of the  
*Exchequer*,

*Exchequer, Justice Warburton, Justice Crook, Baron Bromley, and Justice Winche assisting; and it was then thought fit, and ordered, That in respect of the Greatness of the Cause, and the Doubtfulness of the Law therein, and for the better Satisfaction to all Parties, and the Speedier proceeding in the Cause, both for the Relief of the Poor, and the avoiding of further Charges of Suits of Law by Writt of Error, or otherwise, that in the Action then depending in the King's Bench, a Trial should be had on that Day then Sevensnight, wherein a special Verdict should be had, when all Parts of the Matter in Question, and all Doubts moved therein might be found, and the special Verdict so found should be agreed in the Exchequer Chamber the next Term following by two Councillors at Law on each side, before all the Judges of England, and after such Agreement had, and made, the said Judges might advise thereof unto the End of next Term after, and then every one of the said Judges should deliver their Opinion therein. Which being accordingly done in the Presence of the Lord Chancellor by the King's especial Command, that great Oracle of the Law, Sir Edward Coke, then Lord Chief Justice of the*

the

the *Common-Pleas*, to his great Honour be it spoken, exerted himself, and so clearly explained all the Points in Debate, and so fully answered all Objections, that at length by the *Verdict of the Grand Jury of the Judges of England*, it was found *Billa Vera* that the *Foundation, Incorporation and Endowment of the Hospital was Sufficient, Good and Effectual in Law*.

The Case in Law is in the tenth Book of Sir *Edward Coke's Reports*, to which I think it is much more proper to refer the learned and inquisitive Reader, than to tire his Patience and to expose my Unskilfulness by an Abstract.

On the first Day of *July* following, the Lord Chancellor, who had declared in open Court in the *Exchequer Chamber*, that he concurred in Opinion with the Judges, Decreed, ‘ *That the Complainants, the Governors of the Hospital, and their Successors for ever, shall have, hold, and quietly enjoy as well the great House commonly call’d Charter-house, as all other the Mannors, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments which were conveyed, and appointed by Thomas Sutton Esquire, to, or for the Maintenance of the said Hospital, or any the Uses in any wise concerning*

*Chart.  
Evid.  
House.*

*cerning the same, and that the Tenants thereof shall pay their Rents to the said Complainants accordingly.*

Mr. *Baxter* now heartily repenting his Conduct presented the following Petition to the Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury*.

*To the Most Reverend Father in God, George Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, one of the Overseers of the last Will and Testament of Thomas Sutton Esq; deceased.*

*The Humble Petition of Simon Baxter, Cosen and next Heir of the said Thomas Sutton.*

*Chart.  
Evid. H.*

**I**N all Humbleness sheweth your Grace,  
That whereas it pleased the said *Thomas Sutton*, your Suppliant's Uncle, by his last Will and Testament, to give and bequeath unto your Suppliant 300 *l.* for a Legacy, which is detained from him by one *Richard Sutton* Esquire, the Surviving Executor of the said *Thomas Sutton*, who doth deny Payment thereof, for that, as he alledgeth, the Foundation of the Hospital of the said *Thomas Sutton* was  
by

by your Suppliant's Means called in Question, and great Sums of Money disbursed about the clearing thereof. May it please your Honour, your Suppliant cannot deny, but being *seduced by wicked Council,* and being an unlearned Man, he was contented (*to his now great Grief*) to yield his Consent, that his Name should be used to bring an Action against the Hospital. By means whereof, your Suppliant hath not only much dampnified the Hospital, but hath also unadvisedly spent a great Part of his Estate, and is likely to pay great Sums of Money for his Seducers in a Manner to his undoing. He doth therefore most humbly beseech your Grace to Pardon and forgive him his folly and oversight therein. And to take that Commiseration of him, as to yield your Consent, that the said Mr. *Richard Sutton* may pay your Suppliant his Legacy. Which Favour, if it may please your Honour to afford him, he will always acknowledge it done unto him only of mere Grace, and not of any Desert; and *will be most ready always hereafter, and willing to Strengthen and establish the said Hospital, if it shall be needful by all Ways and Means whatsoever he may or*

‘ *can*: And so in all humbleness, your Sup-  
 ‘ pliant doth submit himself and his Suit  
 ‘ unto your Grace’s Mercy.

And under this Petition his Grace was pleased to write, Mr. *Auditor Sutton*, since this Petitioner seemeth sorrowful for his Error, I wish it should be pardoned, and therefore would have you pay him his Legacy of three hundred Pounds, taking an Acquittance from him for the same.

11 Feb. 1614.

G. Cant.

And it appears by Mr. *Baxter*’s Acquittance to Mr. *Richard Sutton*, he receiv’d the 300 *l.* the 16th of the same Month.

But it was in good Truth, when all Things are fully considered, very ungrateful in Mr. *Baxter* to attempt to over-throw his good Uncle’s pious Designs ; for Mr. *Sutton* was by no Means forgetful, that true Charity always begins at Home, and therefore he took especial Care to make an handsome Provision for this his Heir at Law, by leaving to descend to him the Mannor of *Tarbocke* in *Lancashire*, on which was a fair antient House, two Parks, and large Demeans plentifully

tifully stored with Timber, and the improp-  
 priate Rectory of *Huyton* within the same  
 County. Nor could his Uncle's Founda-  
 tion of an Hospital be a Surprize to Mr.  
*Baxter*, this was Evident and Notorious  
 from the Year 1594, when by a Deed en-  
 rolled in Chancery for an Hospital at *Hal-*  
*lingbury*, Mr. *Sutton* first publicly dedi-  
 cated his Riches to the Glory of God. His  
 Lands were his own proper Acquisitions,  
 and consequently having no Children, he  
 had an indisputable Right to dispose of them,  
 as he pleased.

The Mannor of *Tarbocke* and the im-  
 propriate Rectory of *Huyton* cost Mr. *Sut-*  
*ton* Nine thousand, three hundred Pounds,  
 and Mr. *Baxter* sold them to Sir *Richard* Chart. Evid. H.  
*Molineux* Baronet, for Ten thousand, five Answer of  
 hundreds Pounds, on the 20th of *July* Sir Ri-  
 1615. chard Mo-  
lineux in  
the Dut-  
chy Court  
of Lanca-  
ster, 1618.

So soon did this Spendthrift make away  
 with his Lands of Inheritance; and there-  
 fore, as Extravagance hath seldom any  
 Bounds, would in all probability, had it  
 descended to him, soon have dispatched all  
 his Uncle's great Estate; but by God's espe-  
 cial Providence the good Gentleman was  
 directed to a much more lasting, as well as  
 much better Settlement thereof.

I would gladly leave this Affair here, and most heartily wish I might conceal the Name of that great Lawyer, who was the Chief Councelor of Mr. *Baxter*; but the following Letter written to King *James* by Sir *Francis Bacon* on this Occasion, and printed among his Works, obligeth me to mention him as an Enemy to Mr. *Sutton* and to his Foundation.

*Bacon's*  
Works  
Vol. 4th  
P. 409.  
Ed. 1730.

*May it please your Majesty,*

‘ I FIND it a positive Precept in the  
 ‘ Old Law, *That there should be no*  
 ‘ *Sacrifice without Salt*: The Moral where-  
 ‘ of (besides the Ceremony) may be, that  
 ‘ God is not pleased with the Body of a  
 ‘ good Intention, except it be seasoned with  
 ‘ that Spiritual Wisdom and Judgment, as  
 ‘ it be not easily subject to be corrupted and  
 ‘ perverted. For Salt in the Scripture is  
 ‘ both a Figure of Wisdom, and lasting:  
 ‘ This cometh into my Mind, upon this Act  
 ‘ of Mr. *Sutton*, which seemeth to me as a  
 ‘ Sacrifice without Salt; having the Materi-  
 ‘ als of a good Intention, but not powdred  
 ‘ with any such Ordinances and Institutions,  
 ‘ as may preserve the same from turning  
 ‘ corrupt; or at least from becoming unsa-  
 ‘ vory, and of little Use: For though the  
 ‘ Choice



' Choice of the Feoffees be of the best, yet  
 ' neither can they always live; and the ve-  
 ' ry Nature of the Work itself, in the vast  
 ' and unfit Proportion thereof, is apt to pro-  
 ' voke a Mis-employment: It is no Dili-  
 ' gence of theirs (except there be a Digres-  
 ' sion from that Model) that can excuse it  
 ' from running the same Way, that Gifts  
 ' of the like Condition have heretofore done:  
 ' For to design the *Charter-house* a Build-  
 ' ing fit for a Prince's Habitation, for an  
 ' Hospital, is all one, as if one should give  
 ' in Alms, a rich embroidered Cloak to a  
 ' Beggar: And certainly a Man may see,  
 ' *tanquam quæ oculis cernuntur*, that if  
 ' such an Edifice, with Six thousand Pounds  
 ' Revenue, be erected into one Hospital, it  
 ' will in a small Time degenerate, to be  
 ' made a Preferment of some great Person  
 ' to be Master, and he to take all the Sweet  
 ' and the Poor to be stinted, and take but  
 ' the Crums; as it comes to pass in divers  
 ' Hospitals of this Realm, which have but  
 ' the Names of Hospitals, and are but weal-  
 ' thy Benefices, in respect of the Master-  
 ' ship; but the Poor, which is the *propter*  
 ' *quid*, little relieved: And the like hath been  
 ' the Fortune of much of the Alms of the  
 ' Roman Religion, in the great Foundati-  
 ' ons,

' ons, which being begun in Vain-glory and  
 ' Ostentation, have had their Judgment up-  
 ' on them to end in Corruption and Abuse.  
 ' This Mediation hath made me presume  
 ' to write these few Lines to your Maje-  
 ' sty, being no better than good wishes,  
 ' which your Majesty's great Wisdom may  
 ' make something, or nothing of.

' Wherein I desire to be thus understood,  
 ' that if this Foundation (such as it is) be  
 ' perfect and good in Law ; then I am too  
 ' well acquainted with your Majesty's Dis-  
 ' position to advise any Course of Power  
 ' or Profit, which is not grounded upon a  
 ' Right.

' Nay further, if the Defects be such, as  
 ' a Court of Equity may remedy and cure:  
 ' Then I wish that, as *St. Peter's* Shadow  
 ' did cure Diseases, so the very Shadow of  
 ' a good Intention may cure the Defects  
 ' of that Nature: But if there be a Right,  
 ' and Birth-right planted in the Heir, and  
 ' not remediable by Courts of Equity, and  
 ' that Right be submitted to your Majesty,  
 ' whereby it is both in your Power and  
 ' Grace what to do ; then do I wish that  
 ' this rude Mass and Chaos of a good Deed,  
 ' were directed rather to a solid Merit, and  
 ' durable Charity, then to a blaze of Glo-  
 ' ry,

‘ ry, that will but crackle a little in Talk,  
‘ and quickly extinguish : And this may  
‘ be done, observing the Species of Mr.  
‘ Sutton’s Intent, though varying in *Indi-*  
‘ *viduo* ; for it appears that he had in Noti-  
‘ on, a Triple good, an Hospital, a School,  
‘ and maintaining of a Preacher ; which  
‘ Individuals refer to those three General  
‘ Heads, Relief of the Poor, Advancement  
‘ of Learning, and Propagation of Religion.  
‘ Now then, if I set before your Majesty, in  
‘ every of these three Kinds, what it is that  
‘ is most wanting in your Kingdom, and  
‘ what is like to be the most fruitful and  
‘ effectual Use of such a Beneficence, and  
‘ least like to be perverted ; that I think,  
‘ shall be no ill Scope of my Labour, how  
‘ meanly soever performed ; for out of Va-  
‘ riety represented Election may be best  
‘ grounded.

‘ Concerning the Relief of the Poor ; I  
‘ hold, some Number of Hospitals, and with  
‘ competent Endowments, will do far more  
‘ good than one Hospital of an exorbitant  
‘ Greatness ; for though the one Course  
‘ will be more seen, yet the other will be  
‘ more felt : For if your Majesty erected  
‘ many, besides the observing of the ordi-  
‘ nary Maxim, *Bonum, quo communius, eò*  
‘ *melius,*

‘ *melius*, Choice may be made of those  
‘ Towns and Places, where there is most  
‘ need; and so the Remedy may be distri-  
‘ buted as the Disease is dispersed. Again,  
‘ greatness of Relief accumulated in one  
‘ Place, doth rather invite a swarm and sur-  
‘ charge of Poor, than relieve those that  
‘ are naturally bred in that Place; like to  
‘ ill temper’d Medicines, that draw more  
‘ humour to the Part, than they evacuate  
‘ from it: But chiefly I rely upon the Rea-  
‘ son I touched in the Beginning, that in  
‘ these great Hospitals, the Revenues will  
‘ draw the Use, and not the Use the Re-  
‘ venues; and so through the Mass of  
‘ Wealth, they will swiftly tumble down  
‘ into a Mis-employment. And if any Man  
‘ say, That in the two Hospitals in *London*,  
‘ there is a Precedent of Greatness concur-  
‘ ring with good Employment; let him  
‘ consider, that those Hospitals have Annu-  
‘ al Governors; that they are under the Su-  
‘ perior Care and Policy of such a State  
‘ as the City of *London*; and chiefly, that  
‘ their Revenues consist not in Certainties,  
‘ but in Casualties and free Gifts, which  
‘ Gifts would be with-held, if they appeared  
‘ once to be perverted; so as it keepeth  
‘ them in a continual good Behaviour and  
‘ Awe,

‘ Awe, to imploy them aright: None of  
 ‘ which Points do match with the present  
 ‘ Case.

‘ The next Consideration may be, whe-  
 ‘ ther this intended Hospital, as it hath a  
 ‘ more ample Endowment than other Hos-  
 ‘ pitals have, should not likewise Work  
 ‘ upon a better Subject than other Poor;  
 ‘ as that it should be converted to the Re-  
 ‘ lief of maimed Soldiers, decayed Mer-  
 ‘ chants, Housholders, aged and destitute  
 ‘ Churchmen, and the like; whose Con-  
 ‘ dition being of a better Sort than loose  
 ‘ People and Beggars, deserveth both a  
 ‘ more liberal Stipend and Allowance, and  
 ‘ some proper Place of Relief not inter-  
 ‘ mingled or coupled with the basest Sort  
 ‘ of Poor; which Project, though specious,  
 ‘ yet in my Judgment will not answer the  
 ‘ Design in the Event, in these our Times;  
 ‘ for certainly, few Men in any Vocation,  
 ‘ who have been Somebody, and bear a  
 ‘ Mind somewhat according to Conscience,  
 ‘ and Remembrance of that they have been,  
 ‘ will ever condescend to that Condition,  
 ‘ as to profess to live upon Alms, and to  
 ‘ become a Corporation of declar’d Beg-  
 ‘ gars; but rather will choose to live ob-  
 ‘ scurely, and, as it were, to hide them-  
 ‘ selves

‘ selves with some private Friends : So that  
 ‘ the End of such an Institution will be,  
 ‘ that it will make the Place a Receptable  
 ‘ of the worst, idlest, and most dissolute  
 ‘ Persons of every Profession, and to be-  
 ‘ come a Cell of Loyterers, cast serving  
 ‘ Men, and Drunkards, with Scandal, ra-  
 ‘ ther than Fruit to the Common-wealth :  
 ‘ And of this kind, I can find but one Ex-  
 ‘ ample with us, which is the Alms Knights  
 ‘ of *Windsor*, which Particular would give  
 ‘ a Man small Encouragement to follow  
 ‘ that Precedent.

‘ Therefore the best Effect of Hospitals,  
 ‘ is to make the Kingdom, if it were pos-  
 ‘ sible, capable of that Law, *That there be*  
 ‘ *no Beggar in Israel*; for it is that kind  
 ‘ of People that is a Burden, an Eye-sore,  
 ‘ a Scandal, and a Seed of Peril and Tu-  
 ‘ mult in the State. But chiefly it were to  
 ‘ be wisht, that such a Beneficence towards  
 ‘ the Relief of the Poor, were so bestowed,  
 ‘ as not only the meer and naked Poor  
 ‘ should be sustained; but also that the  
 ‘ honest Person, which maketh hard Means  
 ‘ to live, upon whom the Poor are now  
 ‘ charged, should be in some Sort reliev’d;  
 ‘ for that were a Work generally accep-  
 ‘ table to the Kingdom, if the publick Hand  
 ‘ of

of Alms might spare the private Hand of Tax ; and therefore, of all other Employments of that kind, I commend most Houses of Relief and Correction ; which are mixt Hospitals, where the impotent Person is relieved, and the sturdy Beggar buckled to work ; and the unable Person also not maintained to be Idle (which is ever joined with Drunkenness and Impurity) but is sorted with such Work as he can manage and perform ; and when the Uses are not distinguish't, as in other Hospitals, whereof some are for Aged and Impotent, some for Children, and some for Correction and Vagabonds, but are General and Promiscuous ; so that they may take off Poor of every sort from the Country, as the Country breeds them : And thus the Poor themselves shall find the Provision, and other People the Sweetness of the Abatement of the Tax.

Now if it be objected, that Houses of Correction in all Places have not done the Good expected ; as it cannot be denied but in most Places they have done much good ; so it must be remembered that there is a great Difference between that which is done by the distracted Government of Justices

‘ Justices of Peace, and that which may  
‘ be done by a settled Ordinance sub-  
‘ ject to a regular Visitation, as this may be ;  
‘ and besides the want hath been common-  
‘ ly in Houses of Correction of a compe-  
‘ tent and certain Stock for the Materials  
‘ of Labour, which in this Case may be  
‘ likewise supply’d.

‘ Concerning the Advancement of Learn-  
‘ ing, I do subscribe to the Opinion of one  
‘ of the wisest and greatest Men of your  
‘ Kingdom, that for Grammar Schools  
‘ there are already too many, and therefore  
‘ no Providence to add, where there is Ex-  
‘ cess. For the great Number of Schools  
‘ which are in your Highnesses Realm, doth  
‘ cause a Want, and likewise an overthrow ;  
‘ both of them inconvenient, and one of  
‘ them dangerous ; for by Means thereof  
‘ they find want in the Country and Towns,  
‘ both of Servants for Husbandry, and Ap-  
‘ prentices for Trade ; and on the other  
‘ Side, there being more Scholars bred than  
‘ the State can prefer and imploy, and the  
‘ active Part of that Life not bearing a  
‘ Proportion to the Preparative, it must  
‘ needs fall out, that many Persons will be  
‘ bred unfit for other Vocations, and un-  
‘ profitable for that in which they were  
‘ bred



‘ bred up, which fills the Realm full of  
 ‘ indigent, idle, and wanton People, which  
 ‘ are but *Materia rerum novarum*.

‘ Therefore, in this Point, I wish Mr.  
 ‘ Sutton’s Intention were exalted a Degree,  
 ‘ that, that which he meant for Teachers  
 ‘ of Children, your Majesty should make  
 ‘ for Teachers of Men; wherein it hath  
 ‘ been my ancient Opinion and Observa-  
 ‘ tion, that in the Universities of this Realm  
 ‘ (which I take to be the best endowed in  
 ‘ Europe) there is nothing more wanting  
 ‘ towards the flourishing State of Learning,  
 ‘ than the honourable and plentiful Sala-  
 ‘ ries of Readers in Arts and Professions;  
 ‘ in which Point as your Majesty’s Bounty  
 ‘ already hath made a Beginning, so this  
 ‘ Occasion is offered of God to make a  
 ‘ Proceeding; surely, Readers in the Chair,  
 ‘ are as Parents in Sciences, and deserve to  
 ‘ enjoy a Condition not inferior to their  
 ‘ Children, who embrace the practical Part,  
 ‘ else no Man will sit longer in their Chair,  
 ‘ than till he can walk to a better Prefer-  
 ‘ ment: And it will come to pass, as *Vir-*  
 ‘ *gil* saith,

*Et Patrum invalidi referent jejunia Nati.*

‘ For if the principal Readers, through the  
‘ Meannesse of their Entertainment, be but  
‘ Men of superficial Learning, and that they  
‘ shall take their Places but in Passage, it  
‘ will make the Mass of Sciences want the  
‘ chief and solid Dimension, which is  
‘ Depth, and to become but pretty and  
‘ compendious habits of Practice. There-  
‘ fore I could wish that in both the Uni-  
‘ versities, the Lectures, as well of the three  
‘ Professions, Divinity, Law, and Physick;  
‘ as of the three Heads of Science, Philo-  
‘ sophy, Arts of Speech, and the Mathe-  
‘ maticks, were raised to 100 *l. per Annum*  
‘ a-piece; which though it be not near  
‘ so great as they are in some other Places,  
‘ where the Greatness of the Reward doth  
‘ whistle for the ablest Men out of all for-  
‘ eign Parts to supply the Chair; yet it  
‘ may be a Portion to content a worthy  
‘ and able Man, if he be likewise contem-  
‘ plative in Nature, as those Spirits are, that  
‘ are fittest for Lectures: Thus may Learn-  
‘ ing in your Kingdom be advanced to a  
‘ further Heighth; Learning (I say) which  
‘ under your Majesty, the most learned of  
‘ Kings, may claim some Degree of Ele-  
‘ vation.

‘ Concerning Propagation of Religion, I  
‘ shall in few Words set before your Maje-  
‘ sty three Propositions; none of them De-  
‘ vices of my own, otherwise than that I  
‘ ever approved them; two of which have  
‘ been in Agitation of Speech, and the third  
‘ acted.

‘ The first is a Colledge for Controver-  
‘ sies, whereby we shall not still proceed  
‘ single, but shall, as it were, double our  
‘ Files; which certainly will be found in  
‘ the Encounter.

‘ The Second is a Receipt (I like not  
‘ the Word Seminary, in respect of the  
‘ vain Vows, and implicate Obedience, and  
‘ other Things tending to the Perturbation  
‘ of States involved in that Term) for Con-  
‘ verts to the reformed Religion, either of  
‘ Youth, or otherwise: For I doubt not,  
‘ but there are in *Spain, Italy*, and other  
‘ Countries of the Papists, many whose  
‘ Hearts are touch’d with a Sense of those  
‘ Corruptions, and an Acknowledgement of  
‘ a better Way; which Grace is many Times  
‘ smothered and choaked, through a world-  
‘ ly Consideration of necessity and want;  
‘ Men not knowing where to have Succour  
‘ and Refuge: This likewise I hold a  
‘ Work of great Piety, and of great Con-  
‘ sequence;

‘ sequence; that we also may be wise in  
 ‘ our Generation, and that the watchful  
 ‘ and silent Night be used as well for sow-  
 ‘ ing good Seed, as of Tares.

‘ The third is, the Imitation of a Me-  
 ‘ morable and Religious Act of Queen *Eli-*  
 ‘ *zabeth*, who finding a Part of *Lanca-*  
 ‘ *shire* to be extremely backward in Reli-  
 ‘ gion; and the Benefices swallowed up in  
 ‘ Impropropriations, did by Decree in the Dut-  
 ‘ chy erect four Stipends of 100 *l. per An-*  
 ‘ *num* a-piece for Preachers well chosen  
 ‘ to help the Harvest, who have done a  
 ‘ great deal of good in the Parts they have  
 ‘ laboured: Neither do there want other  
 ‘ Corners in the Realm, that would require  
 ‘ for a Time the like extraordinary Help.

‘ Thus have I briefly delivered unto your  
 ‘ Majesty my Opinion touching the Em-  
 ‘ ployment of this Charity, whereby that  
 ‘ Mass of Wealth, which was in the Ow-  
 ‘ ner little better than a Stack or Heap of  
 ‘ Muck, may be spread over your King-  
 ‘ dom, to many fruitful Purposes, your  
 ‘ Majesty planting and watering, and God  
 ‘ giving the Increase.

‘ Sir

Sir *Francis Bacon* wrote this fine Letter to King *James*, on the breaking out of the Dispute in Law, and it is very artfully calculated to interest his Majesty on his Client Mr. *Baxter's* Side by the Insinuation, that if he succeeded in his Suit, all would be referr'd to his Majesty's good Pleasure; *But if there be a Right, and Birth-right planted in the Heir, and not remediable by the Courts of Equity, and that Right be submitted to your Majesty, whereby it is in your Pleasure and Grace what to do; then do I wish, that this rude Mass and Chaos of a good Deed were directed rather to a solid Merit, and durable Charity, than to a blaze of Glory, that will but crackle a little in Talk, and quickly extinguish; but notwithstanding this, it is hop'd Mr. Sutton's Charity is durable, and of a solid Merit, more especially if we can clear it from the Objections this severe Inquisitor raiseth against it.*

The first of which is, to quote the very Words, *That it seemeth as a Sacrifice without Salt, having the Materials of a good Intention, but not powdered with any such Ordinances and Instructions, as may preserve the same from turning Corrupt, or at least from becoming unsavory,*

*and of little Use.* But most certainly Experience is the best Proof: Mr. *Sutton's* Charity hath now taken Place above an hundred and twenty Years, and if to have comforted more than a thousand afflicted Souls, to have received them to Harbour and Refreshment, nay, to Maintenance and an easy Settlement in this World, and to have lead them gently, and shewn them the streight Path to Heaven in the World to come, be right and good, Mr. *Sutton's* Project is powdered with such Ordinances, and Institutions, as may preserve the same from turning Corrupt; and if to have received more than five hundred Youths, and to have seasoned their tender Years with the Principles of true Religion and useful Learning; nay, and to have led them further to the Universities, and to have reach'd out to them an handsome Annual Pension there, (twenty Pounds) till they have become serviceable in their Generations, and some of them been raised to high Stations, and great Credit in the World, smells not Ill; Mr. *Sutton's Great Charity* is not become unsavory and of little Use, no better than a Sacrifice without Salt.

The Nation hath long since determined in its Favour, and the great Men of it, from that Time to this, have thought it no dishonour (it might perhaps be said have been desirous) to be Governors of this Hospital, and Sir *Francis Bacon* in his turn, who was chosen a Governor on the 28th of *June* 1619, though indeed removed on the 21st of *June* 1621, because then disqualified by a Censure of the House of Lords for that, or any other Place of Trust; nay to the great Honour of this Hospital be it known, that there are few, or none of the chief Families of our Nobility, that have not at one Time, or other graced it with a Governor thereof.

As to Sir *Francis's* next Objection, that to *Design the Charter-house a Building fit for a Prince's Habitation, for an Hospital, is all one as if one should give in Alms a rich embroider'd Cloak to a Beggar*. Time hath furnished us with an Answer to this Objection too; for whatever Embroidery there was in this rich Cloak, it is long since worn out, and the *Charter-house* in its present Buildings is by no Means fit for the Habitation of a Prince, but such as it is, we with all thankfulness to our good Foun-

der receive it for an Healthful Spacious Pleasant Habitation.

The third Objection is, *And certainly a Man may see, tanquam quæ oculis cernuntur, that if such an Edifice with Six thousand Pounds Revenue be erected into one Hospital, it will in a small Time degenerate, to be made a Preferment for some great Person to be Master, and he to take all the Sweet, and the Poor to be stinted, and to take the Crums.* The Master of the Hospital is *one of Mr. Sutton's Children*, I mean Originally a Scholar of the Foundation, and his Salary two hundred Pounds *per Annum*, and his Allotment of Lodging and Diet for himself and Servant, stands not the Hospital in an hundred Pounds more ; an Appointment I presume, which will not be thought too large for the Master of this great Hospital with Six thousand Pounds Revenue.

The last Objection to Mr. Sutton's Project is, *That it will make the Place a Receptacle of the worst, idlest and most dissolute Persons of every Profession, and to become a Cell of Loyterers, and Cast Serving-men, and Drunkards, with Scandal rather than Fruit to the Common-wealth.*

But



But is it not Cruelty to add to Affliction, and to trample on them who are already down? as they are seldom the best of a Profession who come to Poverty, so they are not always the worst. *Time and Chance happen to all Men.* The Prudent and most Careful sometimes Miscarry, and fall into Poverty, as well as the Dissolute and Vain. And *though there are few Men in any Vocation, who have been somebody, and bear a Mind somewhat according to Conscience, and Remembrance of what they have been, will ever condescend to that Condition, as to profess to live upon Alms, and to become a Corporation of declared Beggars;* shall there not be a proper Provision for those meek and humble few? The Hospital in *Charter-house* was designed for them in the first Place. And when these are provided for; shall there be no room, no place of Reception for the penitent Prodigal, who seeks it carefully with Tears? Blessed be God! Mr. Sutton's Heart was too tender, and his Charity too great not to pity and to harbour even these.

There is a Gentleman, who after the imprudent spending of a very considerable Estate, which is now the chief Seat of a

\* Peer of the Realm, hath had time to re-  
Lord  
flect, Raymond.

flect, and recollect himself here ; and bears up chearfully under the most acute Distempers, and is an Example of good Life, and good Manners to the rest of his Brethren, and many other worthy Persons there are among them. The Governors appoint them, and are in general very careful to appoint only such, as are within the Qualifications prescribed, *viz. No Rogues, nor common Beggars, but such poor Persons, as can bring good Testimony of their good Behaviour, and soundness in Religion ; and such as have been Servants to the King's Majesty either Decrepid, or Old, Captains either at Sea, or Land, Soldiers maimed, or impotent, decayed Merchants, Men fallen unto decay through Shipwreck, Casualty of Fire, or such Evil accident, those that have been Captives under the Turks, and such like.* But if among more than a thousand Pentioners, a few unworthy Persons should have crept in, could human Prudence prevent it ? Should all the proper Objects of this Charity have been left unprovided for the Sake of the unworthy Few ? The Scripture Rule seems contrary, a whole City is to be spared for ten Righteous Persons Sake ? I have lived more than twelve Years in the Office of Preacher among

*Assen.*  
B. A. P. 3.

among them, and have known very few, if any unqualify'd, and many right proper and well deserving Persons admitted Pentioners within that Space, and some, who have been thought worthy of very honourable Societies; such was Mr. *Stephen Gray* lately departed to rest, who hath opened a new Scene to the Philosophers by his experimental Discoveries about the Electricity of Bodies, made in his Retirement within these Walls, and out of an especial Regard to his Worth and Abilities, was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society by the unanimous Consent of that learned Body.

The Governors have made and establish'd many excellent Rules and Orders for the good Behaviour in General of the Pentioners, and of all the other Members of the Hospital; and to prevent, as far as possible, that odious and filthy Sin of Drunkenness, it is particularly *Ordered, that if any poor Brother, inferior Officer, or Member of the Hospital shall be Drunk; the Master shall impose on him a Mulct of a Fortnights Commons for the first Offence; for the Second a Months Commons; and for the third Offence the Person so offending shall be expelled the Hospital without any further Order to be taken therein by*

Affem.  
Book B.  
fol. 65.

*the Governors.* Our most worthy Governors therefore have done their Duty; and for the better Discharge of Mine, I take this proper Occasion to admonish, and to beseech most earnestly every Person in *Charter-house to live Soberly Righteously and Godly in this present World*; which is the best Method to prevent all illnatur'd Reflections, as cutting off all real Occasion of Offence. But if there are, or should arise any, who will not take Warning, may this Order be observed inviolably, and be always strictly executed according to the true Intent and Meaning of it.

It is foreign to my Purpose to take any other Notice of the noble Projects in this Advice, than to acknowledge them right worthy the great Genius, and comprehensive Soul of Sir *Francis Bacon*; and to wish most heartily, that worthy Persons may arise with Hearts as good, and Purse as large as Mr. *Sutton*, to bring them into Execution; so I shall hasten to the conclusion of this Advice, in which there is a very unhandsome, and I hope to prove, a very unjust Reflection on our most Worthy Founder.

*Thus have I briefly given my Opinion, touching the Employment of this Charity, whereby*

*whereby that Mass of Wealth, which was in the Owner little better than a Stack, or Heap of Muck, may be spread over your Kingdom to many fruitful Purposes, your Majesty Planting and Watering, and God giving the Increase.*

If Mr. Sutton's Mass of Wealth was an heap of Muck, (which by the Way is but a course unfavory Expression to Majesty, and very justly found fault with by an eminent Critick. How much more decent, and to what great Advantage doth the Thought appear in these beautiful Lines?

*In Heaps, like Ambergris, a Stink it lies, But well dispers'd is Incense to the Skies.)*

*Pope on Riches.*

It produc'd very good Corn in that most judicious Charity of furnishing all his poor Neighbours at less than half Price; and if it be True, as I find written, that he appointed his ordinary Expences at first to the half of his Income, and when that was much increased, to a Third, and gave about an Eighth in Charity; Mr. Sutton far from a Miser lived generously and well. During the Life of Mrs. Sutton, and to the Age of Seventy, it is plain, from her Letter about lenten Stores, he kept a good House;

*Dom. Carthus. p. 51.*

House ; and had a numerous Train of Servants, for no less than Sixteen attended her Funeral in Mourning, and if, when it pleased God to take his Help-mate from him, Mr. *Sutton* now past the general Age of Man broke up his publick House-keeping, and retired with a chosen Few, was that Niggardly and Mean? No, blessed be God, it is clear to a Demonstration, our worthy Founder retired to do Good, and practised Self-denial to give the more nobly away !

Alas! happy had it been for Lord Chancellor *Bacon*, had he thus wisely managed his Family Affairs.

Thus far it is hoped a Pen which Mr. *Sutton* first taught to write, may attempt without Offence to vindicate him, and his Great Charity, which daily feeds a Multitude ; Mr. *Sutton* having planted, the Governors watered, and God, his Name be praised! given the Increase.

C H A P. VII.

*Orders of the Governors.*

*The first Assembly of the Governors at* Assem.  
*Charter-house, was on the 30th of July,* B. A. P. 1.  
 1613.

P R E S E N T.

**T**HE most Reverend George Lord  
 Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*.

The Right Honourable *Thomas* Lord *Elef-*  
*mere* Lord Chancellor.

The Right Honourable *Henry Howard* Earl  
 of *Northampton* Lord Privy-Seal.

The Right Reverend *John* Lord Bishop of  
*London*.

The Right Reverend *Lancelot* Lord Bishop  
 of *Ely*.

The Right Honourable Sir *Edward Coke*  
 Knight, Lord Chief Justice of  
 the *Common-Pleas*.

Sir *James Altham* Knight, one of the Ba-  
 rons of the *Exchequer*.

Sir *Henry Hobart* Knight and Bart. Attor-  
 ney-General.

The

The Reverend *John Overal* D. D. Dean  
of *St. Paul's*.

The Reverend *George Montaigne* D. D.  
Dean of *Westminster*.

*Henry Thoresby* Esq;

*Jeffery Nightingale* Esq;

*Richard Sutton* Esq;

*John Law* Gent.

The Reverend *John Hutton* A. M. Master  
of the Hospital.

P. 3.

And in the first Place they ordered a Survey and Distribution of the several Parts of *Charter-house* to the Uses of the Hospital, and that Mr. *Sutton* and Mr. *Law*, the Founder's Executors, should give proper Directions, and supervize the Survey and necessary Works.

*Item*, it was constituted, and ordained by the Consent of all the Governors, that *there shall no Rogues, or common Beggars be placed in the Hospital, but such poor Persons, as can bring good Testimony of their good Behaviour, and soundness in Religion, and such as have been Servants to the King's Majesty; either Decrepid, or Old, Captains either at Sea or Land, Soldiers maimed, or impotent decay'd Merchants, Men fallen unto Decay through Shipwreck, Casualty of Fire, or such evil Accident,*  
*those*



those that have been Captives under the Turks, &c.

Item, No Children shall be placed there, whose Parents have any Estate in Lands to leave unto them, but only the Children of poor Men, that want Means to bring them up.

And on the 13th of November 1613,<sup>P. 6.</sup> the same Governors assembled again, and elected,

The Rev. *Humphrey Hartness* A. M.  
Preacher.

Mr. *John Mocket* Steward }  
Mr. *John Wotton* Auditor } of the Hospital. <sup>p. 7.</sup>

And proceeded to the Election of one and twenty poor Brethren, or Pentioners, of whom Captain *James Fenner* was the First, and ordered that they should receive five Pounds Quarterly 'till admitted into the Hospital.

And appointed Mr. Baron *Altham*, the <sup>p. 9.</sup> Dean of *St. Pauls*, the Dean of *Westminster*, *Henry Thoresby*, *Jeffery Nightingale*, and *Richard Sutton* Esq; Mr. *John Law* and the Master of the Hospital, or any four of them (Mr. Baron *Altham*, Mr. *Sutton*, and Mr. *Law* being three) to be a Committee of Governors for the more speedy Dispatch of several necessary Affairs.

On

p. 15.

On the 10th of *December* 1613, the Governors assembled and elected 59 Pentioners more, to make up the Number 80, the Number they determined to establish: and ordered that the Eighty Pentioners should receive each five Pounds Yearly by quarterly Payments in Money, and fifteen Pounds in Diet and other Necessaries, besides Physick, Fuel, and a Chamber Furnished.

p. 18.

Ordered, Mr. *Robert Poston* to be Chapel Clerk or Reader, to assist the Preacher of the Hospital.  
*Richard Bird* to be Porter,  
 And *John Partridge* to be Gardiner, both late Servants of Mr. *Sutton*.  
 And appointed several other Inferior Servants.

p. 25.

*On the 19th of July* 1614, *the Governors in Assembly ordered,*

p. 26.

That the Founders Tomb when finished should be placed on the North Side of the Chapel, and the Scholars Seats to be next to the Tomb.

Desired the Lord Bishop of *London* to consecrate the Chapel, and to be very careful

careful in the Choice of a good School-master and Usher.

Elected the Right Honourable *William Herbert* Earl of *Pembroke*, Lord Steward of His Majesty's Household, to be one of the Governors in the Place of the Earl of *Northampton* deceased.

Appointed 35 Scholars, of whom *Francis Lanyer* was the First, and *Joseph Henshaw*, in his Time a very Eminent Preacher, who died Bishop of *Peterborough* in 1678, was the Twenty-ninth.

P. 28.

*Ordered,*

That the Members of the Hospital already appointed, should begin to be admitted on the Monday after *Michaelmas-day*.

On the 3d of *December* 1614, the Governors in Assembly elected the Reverend *Andrew Perne* A. M. to be Master of the Hospital in the Place of Mr. *John Hutton*, who resigned on his Acceptation of the Rectory of *Dunsby* then vacant, and bequeathed to him by the Founder in his Will.

P. 42.

*William Byrde* L. L. D. to be a Governor in the Place of Mr. *John Law* late a Governor, and one of the Founders Executors deceased.

P. 45.

*Francis*

*Francis Smith* Esq; to be Receiver of the Rents and Revenues of the Hospital.

Appointed five Scholars to make up the Number forty.

And now the Founders Tomb being finished, and Mr. *Nicholas Grey* appointed School-master, and Mr. *Henry Bagley* Usher, and all other Things being ready for the compleat Establishment of the Hospital, the Founder's Corps was brought on the Shoulders of the Poor Brethren of his Foundation from *Christ-Church* on the 12th of *December* 1614, the Anniversary of Mr. *Sutton's* Death, in a Solemn Procession, all the Members of the Hospital attending, to the Chapel in *Charter-house*, and there deposited in a Vault on the *North* Side, under his Magnificent Tomb, which is thus inscribed.



Sacred to the Glory of God

In Grateful Memory of

THOMAS SUTTON *Esq;*

**H**ERE LIETH BURIED THE BODY OF  
*THOMAS SUTTON*, LATE OF  
 CASTLE-CAMPS IN THE COUNTY OF CAM-  
 BRIDGE *ESQ;* AT WHOSE ONLY COSTS AND  
 CHARGES THIS HOSPITAL WAS FOUNDED,  
 AND ENDOWED WITH LARGE POSSESSIONS  
 FOR THE RELIEF OF POOR MEN AND  
 CHILDREN: HE WAS A GENTLEMAN BORN  
 AT KNAYTH, IN THE COUNTY OF LIN-  
 COLN, OF WORTHY AND HONEST PA-  
 RENTAGE: HE LIVED TO THE AGE OF 79  
 YEARS, AND DECEASED THE 12th OF DE-  
 CEMBER 1611.

And the 12th of *December* is therefore  
 now by Order of the Governors Mr. *Sutton's*  
 Commemoration Day, when after Morn-  
 ing Service, and a Sermon in the Chapel,  
 there is a Latin Oration in the Hall by one  
 of the Scholars, in Praise of THIS OUR  
 MOST MUNIFICENT BENEFACITOR.

M

This

Fuller's  
Worthies  
Lincoln-  
shire.

Thus this Great Hospital in *Charter-house*, this Master-piece of Protestant Charity, which then appeared Peerless in Christendom on an equal Standard, and Valuation of Revenue, was brought to a compleat Establishment by the great Care, and the wise Orders of the Governors. How it hath succeeded, and what hath been its Fate from 1614, down to the present Time, will be the Subject of another Volume, if it shall be judged acceptable by the Reception of this ; but in the mean Time, and before I conclude, with the Readers good Leave, I would inquire a little into the Original of *Charter-house*, and to what purposes it hath been applied of Old.



## C H A P. VIII.

*Of the Old Foundation.*

**I**T is the Observation of Mr. *Rapin* in the Reign of King *Edward* the Third, after the famous Battle of *Cressy*, and the taking of *Calais*, in the Year 1347, That never had the *English* Name been more illustrious, than it was at this Time, and never had *England* enjoyed a more compleat Happiness. If the Valour, Wisdom, and good Fortune of the King gave an extraordinary Lustre to the Realm, the rare Endowments of the brave Prince of *Wales*, Heir apparent to the Crown afforded a no less happy Prospect for the Time to come.

And that prodigious Plenty, which immediately followed *Edward's* Victories, seemed further to demonstrate, that *England* was the peculiar Object of Heaven's Care.

But Ease and Plenty begot a Looseness of Manners, the usual Consequences of them. All the Historians affirm, that an

unbridled Corruption of Manners prevailed throughout the Kingdom at that Time and God permitted it not to go long unpunished.

A terrible Plague, after having raged in *Asia*, and many Parts of *Europe*, at length reached our Shores, and by Degrees overspread *England*, and made such a dreadful Havock, that one half of the Nation perished by it.

*Stow's*  
Survey  
by *Strype*,  
Vol. 2d.  
b. 4. p. 62.

In the beginning of these dismal Times, Dr. *Ralph Stratford* Bishop of *London* purchas'd three Acres of Land lying without the Walls of *London* on the North Part, between the Lands of the Abbot of *Westminster*, and of the Prior of *St. John of Jerusalem*, and inclosed them with a Brick Wall, and consecrated the Ground for a Burial Place for the Poor and Needy.

And the Plague coming on with great Fury in the Year 1349, Sir *Walter de Manny*, in Imitation of this pious Example, purchased of the Master and Brethren of *St. Bartholomew's* Spittle a piece of Ground called *Spittle-Croft*, containing thirteen Acres and a Rod, contiguous to those three Acres lately dedicated for a Burial Ground by the Bishop of *London*, and caused the Bishop to consecrate it to the same Use;  
and



and there were buried in that Year more than fifty thousand Corpses in these thirteen Acres and a Rod of Ground, as appeared from a Stone Cross sometime standing in *Charter-house-yard*,

An. Dom. M.CCC.XL.IX.

*REgnante magna Pestilentia consecratum fuit hoc Cæmeterium, in quo et infra Septa præsentis Monasterii sepulta fuerunt mortuorum Corpora plusquam quinquaginta millia; præter alia multa abhinc usque ad præsens, Quorum animabus propitiatur Deus. Amen.*

And soon after Sir *Walter de Manny* built a Chapel there for Masses for their Souls, intending to add a College with a Superior and twelve Chaplains, and obtained a Bull of Pope *Clement* the VI. for the uniting of three Ecclesiastical Benefices, not exceeding the Value of one hundred Pounds Sterling in the Book of Tenth for the more ample Endowment thereof. But going abroad soon after to the Wars, the Saint seems to have been lost for a Time in the Soldier, and these Religious purposes forgotten amidst the Din and Clash of Arms.

Dugdale's  
Hist.  
Paul, p.  
34.

Therefore *Michael de Northburgh*, Successor to Dr. *Stratford* in the Bishoprick of *London*, purchas'd of Sir *Walter de Manny* these thirteen Acres and a Rod, from the Time of the Inclosure thereof, and the Building of the Chapel called *New Cherche Hawe*, i. e. *New Church Close*; and at his Death bequeathed two thousand Pounds for the Founding, Building, and Finishing a Convent of *Carthusians* there, and all his Leases whatsoever for the Space of four Years, and all his Rents and Tenements within the City of *London*, some few excepted, and all his Reversions there whatsoever for ever for the better Endowment thereof; and to the Convent, when finished, his two best Silver Basons for the Service of the Altar, and a Silver Pyx enamell'd for the Host, and a Silver Vessel for Holy Water, and a Silver Bell, his two best Vestments to officiate in, and all his Divinity Books.

In the mean Time Sir *Walter de Manny* advancing in Years, *the Heroe reassumed the Saint*, and with the Consent of the Bishop of *London*, to whom *Michael de Northburgh* bequeathed the Patronage and Care of his Foundation, took on him the Care of erecting and endowing a double Monastery

Monastery of *Carthusians* in *New Cherche Hawe*: Sir *Walter de Manny's* Charter of Donation bears Date the 28th of *March*, in the forty-fifth Year of *Edward* the Third.

The Original Charter is now in *Charter-house Evidence-House*, well preserved and legible, and being somewhat curious and not very long is here presented to the learned Reader.

*Carta Walteri Domini de Manny,  
Foundationis novæ domus Salu-  
tationis Matris Dei Ordinis  
Cartusienfis.*

UNIVERSIS Christo Fidelibus Præsentes  
has visuris vel audituris Walterus Do-  
minus de Manny Miles Salutem in Domi-  
no sempiternam. Cum nuper Pestilentia  
esset tam grandis, et violenta in Civitate  
*London'* quod Cœmeteria Ecclesiarum paro-  
chialium ejusdem Civitatis non possunt  
sufficere pro sepulturâ personarum in eadem  
pestilentia decedentium; et nos moti pie-  
tate habentes Respectum ad pericula, et  
dampna, quæ tali hora potuerunt evenisse,  
eo quod non esset sepultura Sanctificata pro

morientibus prædictis ; et considerantes opus  
 misericordiæ in hac parte, de nostra speci-  
 ali devotione acquisivimus tresdecim acras,  
 et unam rodam Terræ extra barram de *West-*  
*smythfield* ejusdem Civitatis in uno loco  
 tunc vocato le *Spittle Croft*, modo autem  
 vocato le *Newe Cherch hawe*, pro sepul-  
 tura personarum supradictarum, et eundem  
 locum per venerabilem Patrem *Radulphum*  
 tunc temporis ejusdem Civitatis Episcopum  
 fecimus benedici, in quo loco plus quam  
 quinquaginta millia personarum in dictâ  
 pestilentia morientium sepulta fuerunt, et  
 postea pro devotione, quam erga Deum ha-  
 buimus, et suam dulcissimam Matrem be-  
 nedictam Virginem *Mariam*, et specialiter  
 ad Festum Annuntiationis ejusdem bene-  
 dictæ Dominæ Matris et Virginis, in quo  
 festo erat initium restitutionis Gaudiorum,  
 quæ amissimus per prævaricationem primo-  
 rum Parentum nostrorum, fieri fecimus in  
 eodem loco unam Capellam in honorem  
 Dei, et Dicti Festi Annuntiationis beatæ  
*Mariæ Matris et Virginis*. Et quia desi-  
 deramus, quod secundum ordinationem nos-  
 tram Orationes devotæ, et divina servitia  
 secundum formam subsequentem ibidem  
 perpetuo fiant, et continuentur, et super  
 omnes Religiosos alios specialem habemus  
 devotionem

devotionem sanctissimæ Religioni Ordinis *Cartusienfis*; iccirco sciatis, quod ad Reverentiam et Honorem Dei, et suæ sanctissimæ Matris, et *Virginis Mariæ*, et ob Devotionem, quam habemus ad dictum festum Annunciationis, nec non et affectionem, quam gerimus ad sanctam Religionem supradictam, nos per præsentēs has nostras fundamus, et facimus unam Domum Monachorum ejusdem Ordinis in loco supradicto, quam vocamus, et vocari volumus in futurum Salutationem Matris Dei in honorem, et perpetuam memoriam benedicti Festi præscripti. Volumus etiam, quod unus dictorum Monachorum vocetur Prior, et per assensum Prioris Cartusiæ Majoris in Sabaudiâ, quæ est principalis Domus Ordinis præfati: ubi etiam dictus Ordo originem cepit, facimus Dominum *Johannem Lustote* Priorem Domus nostræ prædictæ, et donamus, et concedimus, et per hæc scripta nostra confirmamus dicto Priori, et suis Commonachis præfatum locum, qui continet tresdecim acras, et unam rodam terræ, una cum dicta Capella, et omnibus ædificiis ibidem ædificatis pro eorum inhabitatione illic facienda. Nos etiam donamus, et concedimus, et per hæc præsentia scripta nostra confirmamus Dictis Priori, et Monachis et  
eorum

eorum Successoribus tres acras Terræ jacentes extra muros dicti loci in parte boreali pro eorum inhabitatione antedicta: quæ Terra jacet intra terram Abbatis, et Conventus *Westmonasterii* ex unâ parte, et terram Prioris, et Fratrum Hospitalis sancti *Johannis* Jerusalem ex altera Parte, habenda et tenenda, omnia prædicta, terras, Capellam, et Ædificia cum omnibus eorum pertinentiis præfatis Priori et Monachis, et eorum Successoribus in perpetuum de Capitalibus Dominis feodi illius per servitia inde debita, et de more consueta. Volumus insuper, et ordinamus, quod dicti Prior, et Monachi, et eorum Successores habeant specialiter in Missis, Orationibus, et aliis Divinis Servitiis recommendatum Statum Nobilissimi Regis nostri Angliæ Domini *Edvardi* Tertii post conquestum; et statum nostrum, et Domine *Margaretæ* confortis nostræ carissimæ, et hæredes nostros, et Episcopum *London'* qui pro tempore fuerit, quandiu sumus in hâc vitâ, et cum ab hac luce subtracti fuerimus, orent, et celebrent pro Animabus nostris, viz. præfati Nobilissimi Regis, et Animabus Progenitorum et Hæredum suorum, et pro Anima Nostra, et dictæ Confortis Nostræ, necnon pro Animabus omnium Antecessorum, et Hæredum Nostrorum, et pro Anima Aliciæ de Henault

*Sic in autographo.*

Henault quondam Comitissæ Marehall, et pro omnium animabus, qui mortem per Nos subierunt, et pro quibus orare tene-mur, et omnium Benefactorum nostrorum. *Item*, specialiter pro Animâ Magistri *Michaelis* de *Northburgh* quondam Episco-pi *London'*, et pro Animabus successorum Suorum, et omnium, quorum Corpora in prædicto loco sepeliuntur, et omnium Fi-delium defunctorum. Et nos prædicti *Wal-terus* et Hæredes nostri terram, Capellam et Ædificia prædicta cum omnibus suis perti-nentiis Priori, et Monachis, et eorum Suc-cessoribus contra omnes gentes warrantiza-bimus, et defendemus in perpetuum. In-cujus rei testimonium huic præsentî scripto Sigillum nostrum apposuimus his Testibus, Magistro *Johanne Barnet Eliensi*, Domino *Johanne de Bokyngham Lincolnensi* Epis-copis, *Johanne de Hastyng Pembrock'*, *Humfred' de Bohun Hereford*, *Edmundo de Mortuo Mare March'*, *Willelmo de Mon-te acuto Sarum' Comitibus*, *Johanne de Bernes Majore Civitatis London' prædictæ*, *Willelmo de Wallworth*, et *Roberto de Geyton Vicecomitibus ejusdem Civitatis*, et aliis. Dat *London' viceesimo octavo die Mar-tii Anno Regni Regis Edvardi Tertii præ-dicti post Conquestum quadragesimo quinto.*

In this Charter, after the usual Salutation Sir *Walter de Manny* recites his original Donation of the thirteen Acres and a Rod for a Burial Ground, and giveth them, and the Buildings thereon, for a Convent of *Carthusian* Fryars, to be called the House of the Salutation of the Mother of God, and appoints *John, Lustote* with the Consent of the Chief Prior of the Order, to be the first Prior of this Convent; he likewise gives the three Acres adjoining, consecrated by Bishop *Stratford*, for the Burial Ground, (of which it seems he had obtained a grant) and concludes with ordering the Monks to pray for the good Estate of the King, of Himself, and of Lady *Margaret* his Wife, and of the Bishop of *London* for the Time being; as likewise for the Soul of *Alice de Henault*, formerly Countess Mareschal, and for the Souls of all those that had died by his Hands, and for the Souls of all his Benefactors, especially for the Soul of *Michael de Northburgh*, late Bishop of *London*, and for the Souls of all them that lay buried in that Ground.

This is all the Mention of *Michael de Northburgh* in Sir *Walter de Manny's* Charter of the Foundation, and therefore the Generality of our Historians have given



to Sir *Walter* the sole Honour of the Foundation, but Arch-bishop *Parker* in his *Antiquitates Britannicæ*, and Sir *William Dugdale* in his *Monasticon Anglicanum*, and in his History of St. *Paul's Cathedral* already quoted, might if consulted have set them right. For that very learned Prelate at the Year 1370, hath these Words, 'Carthusianorum item Cœnobium Londini  
' Sumptibus *Michaelis de Northburgh*  
' *Londinensis* Episcopi, et *Walteri de*  
' *Manny* Militis inchoatum; *Londinensi*  
' Episcopo Mortuo, etiam hoc anno perfectum est". The Monastery of *Carthusians* in *London*, begun at the Expence of *Michael de Northburgh* Bishop of *London*, and of Sir *Walter de Manny*, the Bishop being dead, was finished in this Year. And that indefatigable accurate Antiquary Sir *William Dugdale* giveth us the Licence of King *Edward* the *Third* for the Foundation, and the Bull of Pope *Urban* the Sixth for the better Endowment of the Monastery.

*Carthusiense Cænobium in Suburbio Londinensis Civitatis, La Salutation de Mere Dieu, nuncupatum.*

*Licentia Edvardi tertii de Fundatione ejusdem.*

*Rex omnibus ad quos, &c. Salutem.*

Vol. 1.  
Monast.  
Angli. p.  
961.

**S**CIATIS, quod de Gratiâ nostrâ speciali concessimus & Licentiam dedimus pro nobis & Hæredibus nostris, quantum in nobis est, Dilecto & Fideli nostro *Waltero Domino de Manny Militi*, quod ipse in solo suo proprio, viz. in quodam loco extra Barram de *West-Smithfield London*, vocato *Newe Cherche Hawe*, quod quidem solum de nobis non tenetur in capite, quandam domum Monachorum Ordinis *Cartusienfis*, viz. de quodam Priore & certis Monachis ibidem, La vocatam *Salutation de Mere Dieu*, in honore Dei & B. *Mariæ Virginis* Fundare, & 20 acras terræ cum pertinentiis de solo prædicto, unâ cum quâdam Capellâ & aliis Domibus supra terram prædictam ædificatis, dare possit & assignare

signare præfatis Priori & Monachis, & Successoribus suis pro inhabitatione suâ ibidem facienda, ad Missas, Orationes, & alia Divina Servitia, pro salubri statu nostro, & ipsius *Walteri & Margaretæ* Uxoris ejus, dum vixerimus; & pro Animâ nostrâ, & pro Animabus Progenitorum & Hæredum nostrorum: nec non Animabus eorundem *Walteri & Margaretæ*, Antecessorum, & Hæredum suorum, cum ab hac luce abstracti fuerimus, & Animabus *Alicie de Henault*, & *Michaelis Northburgh*, nuper *Episcopi Londinensis*, ac omnium Benefactorum ipsius *Walteri*, & omnium Fidelium defunctorum in Capella, & domibus prædictis juxta Ordinationem ipsius *Walteri* inde faciendam, celebrandas, & faciendas in perpetuum.

*Apud Westm.*  
6 die Febr.

*T. Rege.*

From this Licence which was granted on the 6th of *February* preceding Sir *Walter de Manny's* Charter of the Foundation, dated 28th of *March* in the 45th Year of the Reign of King *Edward* the Third, 1371, Archbishop *Parker* dates the Foundation of the Monastery.

*Bulla*

Bulla *U R B A N I* Papæ.

Ex auto-  
grapho in  
Curiâ  
Augment,

*Urbanus Episcopus Servus Servorum Dei, Dilectis Filiis, Priori, & Conventui novæ Domus Matris Dei prope Londonias Ordinis Cartusienfis Salutem & Apostolicam Benedictionem.*

**E**XHIBITA nobis pro vestra parte petitio continebat, quod dudum fælicis recordationis *Clementi* Papæ Sexto, Prædecessori nostro exposito, quod quondam *Walterus de Manny* Miles, Cameraensis Diœcesis, tempore quo mortalitas hominum vigebat in partibus *Anglicanis*, locum, seu fundum quendam prope *Londonias* acquisiverat, quem de licentiâ Ordinarîi in Cœmeterium pro sepulturâ Pauperum dedicari, & Capellam in eodem fundo ædificari fecerat opere sumptuoso: in quo Collegium 12 Capellanorum, & unius, qui præesset iisdem, ordinare de bonis propriis, & sufficienter dotare disposuerat; ac eidem Prædecessori supplicato, ut eidem Militi fundandi & dandi Licentiam hujusmodi

modi concedere dignaretur: Idem Prædecessor Episcopo *Cantuariensi*, & Episcopo *Londinensi*, non expressis nominibus, vel eorum alteri, dando per suas Literas Facultatem, Collegium juxta Ordinationem utriusque, vel alterius ipsorum, de Perpetuis Capellanis, vel Ministris usque ad dictum vel alium minorem numerum, prout eidem Militi videretur; ac Persona, quæ eidem Collegio præesset faciendum in dictâ Capellâ, fundandi tamen dote sufficienti dictæ Capellæ de bonis ipsius Militis primitus assignata, jure Parochialis Ecclesiæ, & cujuslibet alterius semper salvo, ad Instantiam ejusdem Militis duxerat concedendum. Ac Insuper uniendi ea vice eidem Collegio instituto prius & dotato, tria Beneficia Ecclesiastica in Regno *Angliæ* consistentia, quorum fructus centum librarum sterlingorum summam, secundum taxationem decimæ, non excederunt, ad cujusunque Patronatum spectantia, Patronorum ad id consensu accedente, prout in iisdem Literis ejusdem Prædecessoris plenius continetur: Et demum prout eadem Petitio subjungebat, *bonæ memoriæ Michael Episcopus Londinensis, & idem Miles, prædicto Collegio nondum instituto, Conventum duplicem Monachorum Ordinis Cartusienfis in loco prædicto mutato proposito dicti Militis fundaverunt.*

Quare nobis humiliter supplicare fecistis quatenus iisdem Archiepiscopo & Episcopo, similem uniendi domui seu conventui vestro Beneficia Ecclesiastica cum curâ, vel sine curâ, ad summam ducentarum librarum Sterlingorum, secundum taxationem Decimæ ascendentia, in dicto Regno consistentia; ad quorumcunq; etiam Laicorum patronatus pertineant, dummodo Patronorum ad id accedat assensus, & ipsa Beneficia dictam summam non excedant, facultatem concedere dignaremur: Nos igitur, vestris in hac parte Supplicationibus inclinati, Venerabili Fratri Archiepiscopo *Cantuariensi* uniendi hac vice, duntaxat authoritate Apostolicâ, Ecclesias Parochiales, seu Beneficia Ecclesiastica, ad quorumcunque, etiam Laicorum, Patronatus pertinentia, dummodo Patronorum ad id accedat assensus, & jus Patronatus post Unionem vobis remaneat, ac eorum fructus, Redditus, & Proventus ducentarum librarum Sterlingorum secundum taxationem decimæ, valorem annuum non excedant, dictosque Priorem & Conventum, vel Procuratores suos eorum nomine, post unionem hujusmodi, cedentibus vel decedentibus Rectoribus ipsorum, & Beneficiorum, qui tunc fuerint, vel aliâ Beneficia ipsa quomodocumque dimittentibus; in Beneficiorum

neficiorum ac jurium, ac pertinentiarum  
 prædictorum corporalem possessionem indu-  
 cendi, & defendendi Inductos, amotis qui-  
 buslibet detentoribus ab iisdem, ac faciendi  
 ipsis Priori & Conventui, de ipsorum Be-  
 neficiorum Fructibus, redditibus, proventi-  
 bus, congruas portiones ad ipsius Archiepis-  
 copi vel Ordinarii arbitrium, (super quo  
 ipsius Archiepiscopi & Ordinarii conscien-  
 tiam oneramus) taxandas; ex quibus si sint  
 Ecclesiæ Parochiales, perpetui Vicarii per  
 Priorem, qui erit pro tempore, & conven-  
 tum dictæ domus, ad Beneficia eadem præ-  
 sentandi, commodè sustentari, jura Episco-  
 palia solvere, & alia iis incumbentia onera  
 sustentare: Contradictores Autoritate nos-  
 trâ, appellatione postposita, compescendo,  
 non obstantibus si aliquis super provisionibus  
 sibi faciendis de hujusmodi vel aliis Benefi-  
 ciis Ecclesiasticis in illis partibus, Speciales  
 vel Generales Apostolicæ Sedis, vel Lega-  
 torum ejus Literas impetravit, etiam si per  
 eas ad inhibitionem, reservationem, & de-  
 cretum, vel aliàs quomodolibet, sit pro-  
 cessum: Quas Literas & Processus habitos,  
 & quos per eos post unionem hujusmodi  
 haberi contigerit, ad dicta Beneficia volu-  
 mus extendi. Sed nullum per hoc iis quoad  
 asscutionem aliorum beneficiorum præjudi-

cium generari, & quibuscumque Privilegiis, Indulgentiis, & Literis Apostolicis Generalibus vel Specialibus, quorumcunque tenorum existant, per quæ præsentibus non expressa, vel totaliter non inserta effectus earum impediri valeat quomodolibet, vel differri, & de quibus quorumque totis tenoribus habenda sit in Literis nostris mentis specialis, plenam & liberam tenore præsentium potestatem concedimus.

*Datum Romæ.*

*Apud Sanctam Mariam  
trans Tyberim pridie  
Idus Decembris, Pon-  
tificatus nostri Anno  
primo.*

Thus Sir *William Dugdale* delivers this Bull without any Explanation of the Date, and from him Mr. *Herne* hath inserted it in his *Domus Carthusiana*.

And from this Bull it is as plain, as Words can make it, that *Michael* Bishop of *London*, and Sir *Walter de Manny* founded a double Convent of *Carthusians* here. *Bonæ Memorix Michael Episcopus Londinensis,*



*sis, et idem Miles Conventum duplicem Monachorum Ordinis Cartusienfis fundaverunt.*

But Mr. *Herne* mistaking the true Author of this Bull, which bears Date in the first Year of that Pope's Pontificate, and attributing it to Pope *Urban* the 5th, who ascended the Papal Throne 1362, could not reconcile it to the subsequent Foundation of the Monastery near ten Years after; and therefore let it pass without any Observations, or one Word about Bishop *Michael*; and from him Mr. *Newcourt*, in his Repertorium, Mr. *Stevens* in his Continuation of the Monasticon, and others seem led into the same Mistake about the Author of the Bull. Whereas *Baronius* in his Annals, and all other Ecclesiastical Historians agree that Pope *Urban* the 5th was elected and crowned Pope at *Avignon*, and until the fifth Year of his Pontificate came not to *Rome*, from whence this Bull is dated in the first Year of the Pontificate of whatsoever Pope *Urban* he was, that wrote it; but it could not be Pope *Urban* the 5th. *Urban* the 6th was made Pope at *Rome* in 1378, and his Letter to the University of *Paris*, giving an Account of his Election, bears Date from the very same Place at *Rome*, as this Bull, *Romæ apud Sanctam Mariam*

Baron *An-*  
*nales* Tom  
14. p.  
1298.

Tom 15.  
P. 2.

*Ibid.* p. 111.

*Mariam Trans Tiberim undecimo Caleudarum Decembris Pontificatus nostri anno primo*, three Weeks before. Permit therefore this Bull to return to the true Author, and to the true Date, the 12th of *December* 1378, and all will be Right; and *Michael de Northburgh* Bishop of *London*, and Sir *Walter de Manny* will be Co-founders of the House of the *Salutation* of the Mother of God, a double Monastrey of the Order of *Carthusians* near *Smithfield* in *Middlesex*. The *French* call an House of this Order *La Chartreuse*, and from this the Word *Charter-house* is most plainly derived.

*Michael de Northburgh* Bishop of *London*, was originally a Dominican Fryar, and became Chaplain and, Confessor to King *Edward* the Third, and according to the Latin of *Robert de Avesbury* an Historian, who wrote in those Times, was *Valens Clericus de Conciliariis Domini Regis existens & continuè progrediens cum Eodem*; an able Clerk one of the Council to the King, and constantly attendant on him: i. e. in the Warlike Expedition, of which *Robert de Avesbury* was writing, and recites Letters of *Michael de Northburgh*, giving an Account of the taking of the City  
of

*Robert de Avesbury*  
p. 136.

of *Caen*, of the Famous Battle of *Cressy*, and of the Progress of the Siege of *Calais* to the 14th of *September* 1346 on which the last Letter bears Date. King *Edward* conferred on *Michael de Northburgh* several Ecclesiastical Benefices; and on the Death of Dr. *Ralph Stratford* Bishop of *London*, in 1354, his Majesty was pleased to advance him to the Bishoprick, who enjoyed it to the 9th of *September* 1361, on which he died of the Plague at *Coptford* in *Essex*, and in his Will bearing Date the 23d of *May* that Year, besides his Legacy for the Foundation of the Monastery, he bequeathed one thousand Marks to be put into a Chest standing in the Treasury of St. *Paul's*, out of which any poor Man might for a sufficient Pledge, borrow ten Pounds, the Dean, and Principal Canons twenty Pounds, or as far as forty Marks, the Bishop of *London* forty Pounds, a Nobleman or Citizen twenty Pounds, for one Year; but if the Money was not then returned, the Preacher at St. *Paul's Cross* was to give Notice that the Pledge for it would be sold within fourteen Days, if not redeemed in the mean Time; and the Surplusage, if any, of the Pledge sold was to be returned to the Owner. He founded likewise a Chan-

*Godwin de Præsulibus.*

P. 241.

*Dugdale's History of St. Paul's*

P. 34.

try in *St. Paul's*, according to the Religion of the Times, to pray for his Soul.

*Froffard*  
C. 19.

Sir *Walter de Manny* was a Native, and Lord of the Town of *Manny* in the Province of *Hainault*, and attended *Philippa* of *Hainault* into *England* on her Marriage with King *Edward* the Third, and being a most Valiant Man at Arms, was ever after retained, and very much beloved, and honoured by that Warlike King; who in the fifth Year of his Reign, Knighted *Walter de Manny* with Ceremory, granting him Robes out of the great Wardrobe as a Banneret. I shall not stay, because foreign to the chief Purpose, to give a Detail of all the great Actions performed by this Valorous Knight, but with the Readers good leave must mention an Action or two.

*Dugdale's*  
Bar. Vol.  
2d. p. 149.

*Froffard*  
C. 20.

In the Year 1346, *John* Duke of *Normandy*, Eldest Son of King *Philip de Valois*, laid Siege to *Aiguillon*, a strong Castle scituate between two Rivers, the *Garonne* and the *Lot* in *Guienne*, with an Army of 100,000 Men; and finding a much greater Resistance than he expected, rashly swore he would not stir thence till he had taken the Place; But Sir *Walter de Manny* was there, and took care that the Duke of *Normandy* should have time to repent of his

his Vow, and found him Employment so long before the Castle, that King *Edward* came over from *England*, and his Son the young Prince of *Wales* the Famous Black Prince, under his Father's Auspices won the great Battle of *Cressy*, and the Army of *England* sat down before *Calais* in the mean Time, and then at length the Duke of *Normandy* a most Religious Observer of his Word, and afterwards when King of *France* Author of that worthy Sentence, that *though Faith and Truth were banished from the rest of the World, they ought to be preserved in the Mouth of Kings*, sent to the Pope for a Dispensation from his Oath, and that obtained with a good Conscience according to the Religion of those Times, but not without great Loss of Honour raised the Siege of *Aiguillon*, and marched to the Assistance of his Father King *Philip*.

But the Valiant Sir *Walter de Manny*. C. 135. to take a Soldier-like Leave of him, on his Retreat dashed in among the *French* with his Men at Arms, and making a great Slaughter took many Prisoners, from whom he first learned the News of the Battle of *Cressy*, and the Siege of *Calais*. And Sir *Walter's* Heart burning within him to be with his Royal Master in this time of Action,

on, he demanded of one of his Prisoners a Knight, a great Favourite and near Relation of the Duke of *Normandy*, what he would pay for his Ransome, and on the Knight's offering him 3000 Crowns, Sir *Walter* replied he knew well, that he could afford to pay him 10000 Crowns, but that he would immediately give him his Liberty on this single Condition, that he would go directly to the Duke of *Normandy*, and procure a safe Conduct for Sir *Walter*, and twenty Men at Arms to King *Edward* at the Siege of *Calais*, which the Knight gladly undertaking, rode away to the Duke of *Normandy*, and soon after brought Sir *Walter* the safe Conduct desired.

Then did this brave *English* Knight with his twenty Men at Arms ride with his Banner display'd through the Heart of *France* as far as *Orleans*, but was stopt there by order of King *Philip*, and brought to *Paris* and cast into the Prison of the *Chatelet*; and the Duke of *Normandy* insisting on the safe Conduct he had granted to Sir *Walter*, and the King Demurring to let loose so dangerous an Enemy, the Duke of *Normandy* plainly told his Father, this Breach of the safe Conduct would be to his utter Dishonour, and that if his Majesty would  
not

not permit Sir *Walter de Manny* the full Benefit of it, he himself would never bear Arms more; then at length the King gave Way, and to make some Amends to Sir *Walter* for his Imprisonment, highly honoured and entertained him at Dinner, and made him several rich Presents, which Sir *Walter* would accept only on this Condition, if it should be with the good liking of King *Edward* his Master; after this Sir *Walter* and his Men at Arms took Horse, and without other Interruption rode to King *Edward* before *Calais*, to whom Sir *Walter* was most welcome; but King *Edward* displeas'd with this Knight's unjust Imprisonment, order'd him to return King *Philip* his Presents, which Sir *Walter* did by a young Gentleman of his Family, on whom King *Philip* bestowed them for his Pains, and *Calais* being soon after taken, Sir *Walter* attended King *Edward* to *England*.

King *Edward* had made Sir *Amery de Pavia a Lombard*, who had been one of his Governors in his Infancy, Governor of *Calais*, who was a good Soldier, but a great Lover of Money; therefore *Montmo-*  
*rency* and *Charny* two *French* Lords, knowing his weak Side, privately offered him twenty thousand Crowns to deliver up *Calais*,

*lais*, which the covetous Wretch could not refuse.

But King *Edward* having Intelligence of the Affair, sent for Sir *Amery de Pavia* to *England* as to consult with him, and upon his coming into his Presence upbraided him with the Treachery; and Sir *Amery's* guilty Conscience soon brought him upon his Knees to beg Pardon, which King *Edward* vouchsafed him upon Condition, that he would turn the Plot upon these *French* Lords, and deliver them into his Hands.

And therefore the Time being fixed on for Sir *Amery's* Delivery of *Calais*, King *Edward* and the Prince of *Wales* having Notice, went privately over under the Banner of Sir *Walter de Manny*, to entertain these *French* Lords.

And at the time of Night appointed Sir *Amery de Pavia*, taking Care like a true *Lombard*, to possess himself in the first Place of the twenty thousand Crowns, admitted an hundred Horsemen into the Town, who were all made Prisoners, and immediately the Gate opening with a great Noise, there issued out Sir *Walter de Manny* with his Banner display'd, the King and the Prince with him under it.



The *Frenchmen* without finding how Matters stood, behav'd themselves Valiantly, and resolv'd to fall Gloriously; but one Sir *Eustace* of *Ribeaumont* surpass'd all others, which King *Edward* observing had a Mind to make Trial of his Prowess, and stepping out of the Rank cried, Have at me *Ribeaumont*; *Ribeaumont* immediately accepted the Challenge, and a noble Encounter ensued, in which King *Edward* was stricken towards the Ground, but recovered himself, and at length took *Ribeaumont* Prisoner, and deliver'd him over to safe Custody, continuing himself unknown.

But in the Evening King *Edward* ad- C. 152.  
mitted his noble Prisoners to Supp with him; and after Supper his Majesty walking about, and talking first to one, and then another, at last coming up to Sir *Eustace de Ribeaumont*, accosted him thus, Sir *Eustace*, *I never saw a Knight attack his Enemy more briskly, nor defend himself more bravely than you have done to Day, I never was so fully employed in my Life, and then taking a rich Chapelet of Pearl from his own Head, the King put it on Sir Eustace's with this fine Eulogium, I give you this Chapelet as the best Knight of the Field, and desire you will wear it this Year*

*Year for my Sake ; (it was then New-Years-Day) I am told you are a great Admirer of the Ladies, you are from this Moment at full Liberty to present your self before them, and I believe you will not be the less acceptable for this Adventure.*

Thus gallantly did that Heroick King reward Valour in an Enemy, and we may be sure therefore he would not overlook it in his own Servants.

*Dugdale  
Baron.  
Vol2d.  
p. 149.*

Sir *Walter de Manny* was made by him a Peer of the Realm and a Privy Councillor, and Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, and when after a Life spent in the most glorious Deeds of Arms, Sir *Walter* died the latter End of the Year 1371. King *Edward* and his Royal Family of Heroes with the Nobility honoured the Funeral with their Presence, and attended the Corps to the Chapel of the new erected *Carthusian* Monastery, where it was solemnly interred in the Midst of the Choir, and an Alabaster Tomb, like Sir *John Beauchamp's* at *St. Paul's*, by his own appointment erected for him, and by his Will bearing Date the 30th of *November* 1371, he bequeathed an old Debt of 1000 *l.* due to him from the King, and the Moiety of an 100 *l. per Annum* due to him for many Years

*Weaver's  
Fun. Mo-  
numents  
p. 433.*

Years past from the Prince of *Wales*, as Governor of *Hardelagh* Castle, for the better Endowment of the Monastery.

This Monastery continued to flourish, and was endowed with great Priviledges, 'till the fatal Reign of King *Henry* the Eighth; in the beginniug of the 26th Year of which *John Howgton* Prior of this Monastery, and *Humphrey Midylmore* the Procurator, were imprisoned in the Tower of *London*, for refusing to swear to the Succession, as then settled by Act of Parliament, and to acknowledge King *Henry* the Eighth Head of the Church of *England*, expresly renouncing the Pope. But after a Month's Imprisonment they complied, and both with some others of the Monastery swore what was required of them, and gave an authentick Certificate thereof under their Hands the same Day, *viz.* the 29th of *May* 1534.

However the Major Part of the Convent then refused, 'till after a very mature Deliberation they likewise swore, and subscribed what was required of them on the 6th of *June* following. These two Subscriptions are in *Rymer's Fædera* Tom. XIV. p. 491 and for the Reader's satisfaction are printed in the Appendix.

But

But Prior *Howgton* could not hold his Tongue, and was convicted of speaking against the King and his Supremacy, when it was now by a particular Act of Parliament made Treason to do it, and together with two other *Carthusian* Priors, originally Monks of this Convent, and a Monk of *Sion-house* condemned on the same Account, hanged, drawn and quartered on the 4th of *May* 1535; *Stow* placeth this to the 29th of *April*, but I choose rather to follow *Maurice Channey*, or *Chancy*, who was then a Monk of the Convent, and hath wrote a Treatise entitled, *Passio Octodecim Carthusianorum*, on purpose to celebrate Prior *Howgton*, and the suffering Monks of this Convent as Martyrs for the Truth; for it is most probable, he is right in the particular Dates.

The Heads and Quarters of these unhappy Sufferers were fixed up in the most proper Places, to strike Terror into the Monks; and particularly one of the Fore-quarters of Prior *Howgton* was put over the great Gate of *Charter-house*, as a Warning to the Convent.

But notwithstanding this, *Humphrey Midylmore*, who had been the Year before imprisoned with the Prior, *William Ex-*  
*mer,*

*mew* and *Sebastian Nudigate*, three of the Chief Monks of the Convent were soon after apprehended, condemned and executed for the same Crime, viz. on the 19th of June 1535.

There being yet new Statutes enacted by Parliament against the Pope, this Convent was again required to renounce him by Oath, to acknowledge the King *Supreme Hedd in the Erthe of the Church of Englonde*, and the new Prior and the Major Part of the Monks again complied on the 18th of May 1539, but ten, nine of whom had sworn and subscribed in 1535, absolutely refused now, and were committed close Prisoners to *Newgate* on the 29th, and what became of them there, as likewise what was Prior *Trafford's* Character, and of his Surrendring the Monastery to the King, the following Letter from Mr. *Bedyll* the acting Visitor on this Occasion will inform us.

*My very Good Lord,*

AFTER my most hearty Commendations, it shall please your Lordship to understand, That the Monks of the *Charter-house* here at *London*, which

Cotton Library  
Clea-  
patra E.  
IV. 134.  
folio 217.

O

were

‘ were committed to *Newgate* for their  
‘ traiterous Behaviour long time continued  
‘ against the King’s Grace, be almost dis-  
‘ peched by the Hand of God, as it may  
‘ appear to you by this Bill inclosed.  
‘ Whereof (considering their Behaviour and  
‘ the hole Matter I am not sorry) but  
‘ would that all such as love not the King’s  
‘ Highness and his worldly Honour were  
‘ in like Case.

‘ My Lord, (as you may) I desire you  
‘ in the way of Charity, and none other-  
‘ wise to be good Lord to the Prior of the  
‘ said *Charter-house*, which is as honest a  
‘ Man, as is in that Habit (or else I am  
‘ much deceived) and is one, which never  
‘ offended the King’s Grace by Disobedi-  
‘ ence of his Laws, but hath laboured ve-  
‘ ry fore continually for the Reformation  
‘ of his Brethren, and now at the last, at  
‘ my exhortation and instigation, constant-  
‘ ly moved and finally perswaded his Bre-  
‘ thren to surrender their House, Lands,  
‘ and Goods into the King’s Hands, and  
‘ to trust only to his Mercy and Grace.  
‘ I beseech you my good Lord, that the  
‘ said Prior may be so intreated by your  
‘ help, that he be not sorry and repent  
that

‘ that he hath fered and followed your  
 ‘ fore Words, and my gentel exhortations  
 ‘ made unto him to surrender his said  
 ‘ House, and think that he might have  
 ‘ kept the same; if your Lordship and I  
 ‘ had not led him to the said Surrender.  
 ‘ But surely (I believe) that I know the Man  
 ‘ so well, that howsoever he be ordered,  
 ‘ he would be contented without Grudge.

‘ He is a Man of such Charity that I have  
 ‘ not seen the like. As touching the House  
 ‘ of the *Charter-house*, I pray God, if it  
 ‘ shall please the King to alter it, that it may  
 ‘ be turned into a better Use (seeing it is in  
 ‘ the Face of our World) and much Com-  
 ‘ munication would run thereof through-  
 ‘ out this Realm, for *London* is the com-  
 ‘ mon Country of all *England*, from which  
 ‘ is derived to all Parts of this Realm, all  
 ‘ good and ill Current here.

From *London* the  
 14th Day of *Jun*.

*By Your Lordships at*

*Commandment*

Thomas Bedyll.

*There be departed*

Brother *William Greenwood*,  
*Dominus John Davye*,  
 Brother *Robert Salt*,  
 Brother *Walter Peerson*,  
*Dominus Thomas Greene*.

*There be even at the point of Death,*

Brother *Thomas Scriven*,  
 Brother *Thomas Reeding*.

*There be Sick,*

*Dominus Thomas Johnson*,  
 Brother *William Horne*.

*One is Hole,**Dominus ——— Bere.*

*Pasfo* 18. And even he sickened afterwards; and of  
*Carthus.* these ten poor miserable Sufferers one  
 Chap. xii. alone, *William Horne* recovered, and he  
 was left to languish in Prison above four  
 Years, and was at length executed on the  
 4th of *November 1541*.



Two other Monks of this Convent, *William Rochester* and *James Vannert*, who had been sent to a Monastery of their Order near *Hull*, and refused to Swear and Subscribe, were hanged in Chains at *York* on the 11th of *May* 1537.

*In all these Executions it cannot be denied, but the Laws were excessively Severe, and the Proceedings upon them were never tempered with that Mildness, which ought to be often applied for the Mitigating the Rigor of Penal Laws.*

*Burnet's*  
*Abridg.*  
*Hist. Re-*  
*form. b. 1.*  
*p. 319.*

This is the most judicious Reflection of Bishop *Burnet*, but it is scarce sufficiently severe upon that cruel Reign, when the Prince's Conscience upon the Throne, (and that a very strange one) was made the Standard of every private Man's, and it was equally Penal, *Death without Mercy*, to deny the Pope's Doctrine of *Transubstantiation*, and not to deny him to be the Head of the Church.

The Authentick Certificate of the Proceedings at *Charter-house* concerning the Oath demanded of the Convent in 1537, is in *Rymer's Fædera*, Tom. xiv. p. 588; and the Act of the Surrender of the Convent hath been copied from the Roll, and may both be seen in the Appendix.

*1 Ma pars*  
*Claus. 29.*  
*Hen. 8.*  
*M. 29.*

The Superscription of Mr. *Bedyll's* Letter is lost: It is most probable, it was wrote to Lord *Cromwel*, but as far as appears, to no great Effect, for Prior *Trafford* had only a Pension of 20 *l. per Annum*, and as to the Scite of the Monastery it was granted on the 12th of *June* 1542, unto *John Bridges* and to *Thomas Hale* for their joint Lives, in consideration of the safe keeping of the King's Tents and Pavilions &c. which had been then for some time there, and on the 14th of *April* 1545, it was given to Sir *Edward North*, Chancellor of the Court of Augmentations in Perpetuity, and valued in the Grant at 50 *l. per Annum*. The annual Revenues at the Dissolution, amounted to 642 *l. 4 s. 6 d.*

13 *Ma*  
pars *Pat.*  
36, *Hen.*  
8. m. 29.

But this Grant of *Charter-house* had like to have cost Sir *Edward North* very dear, if the following Story, which may be found in a little Book, entitled *Some Notes concerning the Life of Edward Lord North, Baron of Kirtling*, written by *Dudley Lord North* a Descendant from him, relates to *Charter-house*, as I am inclined to think it doth, and which his Lordship tells us came to him from a Gentleman then Attendant on Sir *Edward*, who was an *Eye and Ear-witness* of the whole Affair.

Affair. ' Once early in the Morning there P. 10.

' came from the King to *Charter-house*,  
' then the Mansion House of Sir *Edward*  
' *North*, a Messenger known to be no  
' Friend of his, to command his immedi-  
' ate repair to Court, which Message was  
' also delivered with some harshness. This  
' was so terrible in the Suddenness and  
' other Circumstances, as he observed his  
' Master to tremble at the Delivery of it,  
' who yet finding it dangerous to use the  
' least Delay hasted thither, and was ad-  
' mitted speedily to the King's Presence  
' with this his Servant attendant on him.  
' The King was then walking, and conti-  
' nued doing so with great Earnestness, and  
' every now and then cast an angry Eye  
' upon him, which was received with a  
' very still and sober Carriage; at last the  
' King broke out into these Words, *We*  
' *are informed, that you have cheated us*  
' *of certain Lands in Middlesex*, where-  
' unto having received none other than a  
' plain and humble Negation, after some  
' little time he replied, *How was it then,*  
' *did we give those Lands to you?* Where-  
' unto Sir *Edward* answered, *Yes, Sir,*  
' *your Majesty was pleased so to do.* Where-  
' upon having paused a little, the King

*An Historical Account*

‘ put on a Milder Countenance, and calling  
 ‘ him to a Cupboard conferred privately  
 ‘ with him a long Time; whereby said  
 ‘ this Servant, I saw the King could not spare  
 ‘ my Master’s Service as yet. But whether  
 ‘ or no the Cause lay in the King’s occa-  
 ‘ sions, or in the Other’s humble Behaviour  
 ‘ and Answers, it must be left to Judg-  
 ‘ ment, for as *Solomon* saith, *a soft An-  
 ‘ swer turneth away Wrath.*”

Thus far Lord *North* and I am temp-  
 ted to observe that *Solomon* also saith, *The  
 King’s Wrath is as the Roaring of a Lion,  
 and as the Messengers of Death*; which  
 was most certainly true of King *Henry* the  
 Eighth, his Wrath was most terrible, and  
 made the stoutest Hearts to tremble, and  
 Sir *Edward North* was a very Fortunate,  
 as well as a very *Wise Man* thus to pacify  
 it.

This Dextrous Courtier was the Son of  
 a Mercer in *London*, and bred to the Pro-  
 fession of the Law, and became Clerk of  
 the Parliament, and one of King *Henry*  
 the Eighth’s Serjeants at Law; and for his  
 good Services was made first Treasurer, and  
 afterwards Chancellor of the Court Aug-  
 mentations, and a Privy Councelor; and  
 was left by that King in his Will, One of  
 the

the sixteen Governors of the King and Kingdom, during the Minority of King *Edward* the Sixth.

But the Earl of *Hertford*, the young King's Uncle overpowering all the Rest, was made Lord Protector, and Sir *Edward North*, who was not of his Party, was forced to give way, and even to part with his Post of Chancellor of the Court of Augmentations, but upon good Terms, to a Friend and Favourite of the Lord Protector.

Sir *Edward* thence-forward paid his Court to the Princess *Mary*, more especially towards decline of her Brother's Life, and tho' over-awed by the Duke of *Northumberland* to join with the Rest of the Privy Council to the Acknowledgement of Queen *Jane*, as soon as freed from that Awe was one of the First to declare for Queen *Mary*, and was continued a Privy Councelor, and made a Baron by her in in the first Year of her Reign.

On the Accession of Queen *Elizabeth* to the Throne she did Lord *North* the Honor to reside for some Days at *Charter-house*, but this seems rather to have been done out of Regard to the Largeness of *Charter-house*, and the Conveniency of its situation, than out of Respect to Lord *North*; or he was dismissed from the Privy Council,

cel, and very prudently retired to mind his own private Affairs; and died the 31st of *December* 1564.

*Chart.  
Evid.  
House.*

His Son *Roger Lord North* sold *Charter-house* to the Duke of *Norfolk* for 2500*l.* on the 31st Day of *May* following, except that Part on the East Side of the Chapel, which was then the Mansion-house of Lord *North*, and is now *Rutland-Court*, and the Houses adjoining on to *Goswell-Street*.

*Camden's  
Annals  
Eliz.  
1569.*

The Duke of *Norfolk* made *Charter-house* his Place of Residence in Town, 'till committed to the Tower in 1569, for his projected Marriage with *Mary Queen of Scots*. And being enlarged from it in 1570, on his Promise never to think more of that Match, he was remitted to *Charter-house*, under the gentle Confinement of Sir *Henry Nevil*.

*State  
Tryals  
D. of  
Norfolk,  
Vol. I.  
p. 104.*

But the Duke unhappily resuming it again, was again committed to the Tower; and the Cypher of his Correspondence was found hid under the Tiles of the Roof of *Charter-house*, and some particular Papers decyphered by the Duke's Secretary *Hickford*, which he had ordered him to burn, under the Matt leading to the Duke's Bed-chamber, which produced at the Trial, sorely confounded the unfortunate Duke, and contri-

contributed not a little to the Loss of his Head.

But the Safety of the State being secured by his Death, *Queen Elizabeth* was pleased to restore the Family in Blood, and to the Estate; and *Charter-house* came to the Share of Lord *Thomas Howard*, the Duke's second Son, but Eldest by his second Duchess *Margaret* Daughter of Lord *Audley*.

King *James* on his Succession to the Throne of *England* was pleas'd to shew a very remarkable Regard to the Family of the *Howards*, as having been Sufferers for his Mother the Queen of *Scots*. And out of an especial Respect to Lord *Thomas Howard*, (and at the same Time to imitate the Steps of *Queen Elizabeth*) when the Lord Mayor and Aldermen and five hundred of the chief Citizens all in Velvet Gowns and Gold Chains, met his Majesty on Horseback at *Stanford Hill* near *High-gate* on the King's Approach towards *London* from *Scotland* on the 7th of *May* 1603, His Majesty was pleased to be conducted in a Grand Procession to *Charter-house*, and to keep his Court there four Days, and before his Departure on the 11th of *May* to make more than 80 Knights, to do this Lord more abundant

*Stow's  
Annals,  
1603.*

abundant Honor, whom he soon after created Earl of *Suffolk*.

Of this Earl of *Suffolk* Mr. *Sutton* bought *Charter-house*, and disposed of it in the Foundation of the *Present Most Noble Hospital*.

*And thus the Soile which of antient Time was given by Sir Walter de Manny a Knight and a Soldier, for the Sepulchre of Poor Men when they were dead, is now by Thomas Sutton an Esquire and a Soldier converted, and consecrated to the Sustenance of the Poor, and Impotent whilst they live. And therefore a Man may truly apply to this Place the Saying of the Royal Prophet. Thou Lord of thy goodness hast prepared it for the Poor, for the Honour of our Religion, that hath produced such a Work of Piety and Charity, as never was in the Christian World, nay the Eye of Time itself did never see the Like.*

*For the first Gift by Mr. Sutton of Lordships, Mannors, Lands, and Tenements, to continue for ever, for the Maintenance thereof doth amount to the clear yearly Value of 3500 l. or near thereabouts, and within these few Years will be increased to the yearly Value of 5000 l.*

These



These are the Words of Lord Chief Justice *Coke* one of the first Governors, and a Chief Director of *this great Foundation*; and they are most true, the Revenue of the Hospital soon after arose to 5000*l. per Annum*, and is now without racking, or the least Oppression on the Tenants clear of all Deductions *communibus Annis* 6000*l.*

Pref. 10th  
Book  
*Coke's Re-  
ports.*

### *The Conclusion.*

Let therefore all serious thinking Persons, whose Hearts are warmed with *this Great Instance of Charity*; but they more especially, who are cloathed and fed by it *bleſs God, from whom every good and perfect Gift doth come*; and pay a most Honorable Regard to the very worthy Memory of Mr. *Sutton*, who (as it hath been shewn at large) had the *good Fortune* to be born a Gentleman, and *the Happineſs* of the very best Education; setting out thus accomplished he was first retained by the Chief and Richest Nobleman in the Kingdom, that great Duke of *Norfolk*, who esteemed himself little inferior in Revenues to a King of *Scotland*; and after some time spent with his Grace, he was made Secretary to the Earl of *Warwick*, and occasionally

onally to the Earl of *Leicester* his Brother, the One esteemed the best Soldier, and the Other undeniably the most powerful Man in the Nation, who obtained from Queen *Elizabeth* for Mr. *Sutton* out of regard to his great Abilities, and as a Reward of his most faithful Services, the Honorable Post of *Master General of the Ordnance in the North*, which he discharged with great Honor and Reputation in very troublesome Times ; and on the succeeding Calm, not to be Idle, Mr. *Sutton* took on him the peaceable Profession of a Merchant, and by the Farm of the chief Coal Mines, which supplied the City of *London*, grew Rich ; he then returned to *London*, and extending his Dealings thrived beyond all Expectation, 'till he became the Richest Merchant in the Kingdom ; and on the *Spaniards* Invasion of it in the memorable Year 1588, he resumed the *Man at Arms*, and furnished out a Vessel to Sea against them at his own proper Expence ; and afterwards took out Letters of Mart, and by the Capture of a very rich Prize made successful War on the Mighty *Philip* of *Spain*, and for the last finishing Stroke, and to crown all, this FORTUNATE GOOD MAN FOUNDED THE GREAT HOSPITAL IN CHAR-

TER HOUSE TO THE GLORY OF GOD, TO THE HONOR OF THIS PROTESTANT CHURCH AND NATION, AND TO HIS OWN EVER-LASTING REPUTATION.

In his private Life Mr. *Sutton* is delivered down to us under the advantageous Character of a very affectionate tender Husband, of an Exact, but Kind Master, and of a good natur'd Honest Man, Sober and Religious both at Home and Abroad, very Compassionate and very Grateful. His faults and his failings have not reached us, *His great Charity* hath cast a Vail over them, and the *Obliged World* kindly buried them with him. *His good Deeds* remain, may they remain to the latest Period of Time, and at length obtain him the Blessings of Heaven from the great Distributer of Rewards : WELL DONE, THOU GOOD AND FAITHFUL SERVANT ; ENTER THOU INTO THE JOY OF THY LORD !      *Amen.*

*Hallelujah.*






T H E  
A P P E N D I X.

---

*The Last Will and Testament  
of Mr. Richard Sutton.*

‘  *E it Known to all Men by these*  
 ‘ *Presents, That Richard Sutton,*  
 ‘ *of the Parish of St. Swithin,*  
 ‘ *within the City of Lincoln,*  
 ‘ *Gentleman; the 27th Day of July, in*  
 ‘ *the Year of our Lord God 1558, being of*  
 ‘ *perfect Remembrance, made his last Will*  
 ‘ *and Testament Nuncupative, in Man-*  
 ‘ *ner and Form following: First, He be-*  
 ‘ *queathed his Soul to Almighty God, his*  
 ‘ *Maker and Redeemer, and willed his Bo-*

*An Historical Account*

‘ dy to be buried in the Parish Church of  
 ‘ St. *Swithin* aforesaid. *Item*, He be-  
 ‘ queathed to *Thomas Sutton* his Son, his  
 ‘ Lease of *Cockrington*, and all the Years  
 ‘ which were then to come and undeter-  
 ‘ min’d in the same. *Item*, The Residue  
 ‘ of his Goods not bequeathed, he gave to  
 ‘ *Elizabeth Sutton* his Wife and *Thomas*  
 ‘ *Sutton* his said Son, whom he made his  
 ‘ Executors. These being Witnesses,

*John Hall, William Wilson, Joan*  
*Cooke, and Joan Ryall, with*  
*others.*

*Probatum fuit apud Lincoln 22<sup>o</sup> die*  
*mensis Februarii 1562, coram Magistro Ri-*  
*chardo Barbor Officiali, &c. Commissumque*  
*est Onus Executionis dicti testamenti Tho-*  
*mæ Sutton Uni Executorum jurato, reser-*  
*vata potestate simile committendi Onus al-*  
*teri, cum venerit, & voluerit in formâ*  
*Juris in se suscipere.*

*Sexta Pars Patentium de Anno Regni Reginae Elizabethæ Duodecimo.*

REGINA Omnibus ad quos &c. Salutem. Sciatis quod nos pro quibusdam considerationibus nos specialiter moventibus de Gratia nostra speciali, ac ex certa Scientia, ac mero motu nostris Dedimus & Concessimus, ac per præsentis pro nobis Hæredibus, & Successoribus nostris Damus & Concedimus Dilecto Servienti nostro *Thomæ Sutton*, Officium Magistri & Supervisoris omnium & singulorum, Ordinationum, Munitionum, Armourum & Habillimentorum Nostrorum pro guerra nunc remanentium apud Villas nostras Barvici & Novi Castri super Tinam, Calisæ ac alibi ubicumque infra Castra & Turres in partibus nostris Boriabilibus, & omnium aliarum provisionum quæ in posterum ad loca prædicta mittentur de tempore in tempus pro meliori tutela & defensione eorundem. Ac etiam Officium Custodis omnium & singularum domorum nostrarum vulgariter nuncupata-

‘rum the Store-Houses, & Manerii nostri  
 ‘Novi Castri prædicti, & aliorum locorum  
 ‘& ædificiorum vocatorum les Store-houses  
 ‘of Office infra dictam *Villam* nostram  
 ‘*Barwici*, Novi Castri, ac in *Holly Island*,  
 ‘& *Werke* una cum omnibus provisioni-  
 ‘bus in eisdem. Ac etiam hujusmodi &  
 ‘tanta Vibrellatorum in retinentia sua prout  
 ‘nunc sunt aut imposterum erunt appunc-  
 ‘tuata ad essenda in Villa nostra *Barwici*  
 ‘pro Salva garda ejusdem, & vada eisdem  
 ‘debita, ut decet, habenda excercenda oc-  
 ‘cupanda & Gaudenda Officia prædicta &  
 ‘eorum quodlibet præfato *Thomæ Sutton* per  
 ‘se vel per sufficientem Deputatum suum,  
 ‘sive Deputatos suos sufficientes durante  
 ‘vita naturali ipsius *Thomæ Sutton*. Et  
 ‘ulterius de ampliori Gratiâ nostra per præ-  
 ‘sentes pro Nobis, Hæredibus & Successo-  
 ‘ribus nostris, damus & concedimus præfato  
 ‘*Thomæ Sutton*, pro exercitione & occupati-  
 ‘one prædictorum separalium officiorum va-  
 ‘dum & feodum quinque solidorum per diem  
 ‘nec non vadum & feodum Duodecim de-  
 ‘nariorum Sterlingorum per diem pro du-  
 ‘obus Servientibus sub se in Officiis præ-  
 ‘dictis, ac Duodecim denariorum Sterling-  
 ‘orum per Diem pro uno clerico sub se  
 ‘deservituro. Et pro duobus les Laborers  
 ‘pro



' pro Supervisione Horſe, Harnes, Caſke,  
 ' Carte Horſes, ac aliarum proviſionum  
 ' duodecim Denariorum Sterlingorum per  
 ' Diem, viz. quolibet eorum ſex denarios  
 ' per diem le pece, ac huiusmodi & tanta  
 ' vibrellatorum in retinentia ſua prout  
 ' nunc ſunt aut impoſterum erunt appunciu-  
 ' ata ad eſſenda in Villa *Barwici* prædicta  
 ' pro ſalva garda, ejuſdem cum controrotu-  
 ' lamentis eorundem & cujuſdibet eorum  
 ' cum ſolutione vadorum omnibus vibrel-  
 ' latoribus prædictis ſolvendorum per manus  
 ' dicti *Thomæ*, Modo & Forma prout peran-  
 ' tea uſitatum fuit Habenda Gaudenda Le-  
 ' vanda et annuatim percipienda prædicta  
 ' ſeperalia vada & foeda præfato *Thomæ*  
 ' *Sutton* à Feſto Annuntiationis Beatae *Mariæ*  
 ' *Virginis* Ultimo præterito ad terminum  
 ' & pro termino vitæ ſuæ ad Receptum  
 ' ſcaccarii noſtri Hæredum & Succeſſorum  
 ' noſtrorum ad duos anni terminos, viz.  
 ' ad feſta Annuntiationis Beatae *Mariæ Vir-*  
 ' *ginis* & Sancti *Michaelis Archangeli*, per  
 ' æquales portiones, vel per manus theſaurarii  
 ' aut Magiſtri Solutionum denariorum noſ-  
 ' trorum vocati our Treafurer or Paye Maiſ-  
 ' ter, Hæredum & ſucceſſorum noſtrorum  
 ' in dictâ villa noſtra *Barwici* pro tempore  
 ' exiſtentis in forma & ad Feſta prædicta du-

‘ rante vita naturali ejusdem *Thomæ Sutton*,  
 ‘ una cum omnibus & singulis aliis regardis  
 ‘ proficuis, easiammentis quibuscumque eis-  
 ‘ dem Officiis debitis consuetis, sive Spec-  
 ‘ tantibus adeo plene libere & integre, ac in  
 ‘ tam amplis modo & forma prout *Johan-*  
 ‘ *nes Bennet, Henricus Evers*, aut aliquis  
 ‘ alius, sive aliqui alij prædicta Officia an-  
 ‘ te hac habens seu exercens, habentes seu  
 ‘ exercentes, habuit, percepit, vel gavissus fuit,  
 ‘ habuerunt, perceperunt, vel gavissi fuerunt,  
 ‘ in & pro exercitione & occupatione  
 ‘ dictorum Officiorum & eorum cujuslibet.  
 ‘ In cujus rei testimonium, &c. Teste Re-  
 ‘ gina apud *Hampton Courte*. xxviii die *Fe-*  
 ‘ *brurij*. Per breve de privato sigillo va-  
 ‘ catur istud Irrotulamentum, pro eo quod  
 ‘ xxvii die *Maij*, anno Regni Dominae Reginae  
 ‘ *Elizabethæ* xxxvi. infra nominatus *Thomas*  
 ‘ *Sutton* venit coram dicta Domina Regina  
 ‘ in Cancellaria sua personaliter & pura  
 ‘ Sponte, & absolute sursum reddidit in  
 ‘ Manus dictæ Dominae Reginae has Literas  
 ‘ Patentes, & totum Jus, Titulum & Inte-  
 ‘ resse sua in & de eisdem, & restituit can-  
 ‘ cellandas. Ideo ad requisitionem ipsius  
 ‘ *Thomæ* prædicti, istud irrotulamentum e-  
 ‘ vacuatur, cancellatur, & omnino damp-  
 ‘ natur.

*An Act to confirme and enable the  
Erection and Establishment of an  
Hospitall, a free Grammar-  
Schoole, and sundrie other godly  
and charitable Acts and Uses,  
done, and intended to be done  
and performed by Thomas Sut-  
ton Esquire.*

‘ **H**U MBLY beseecheth your Majestie  
‘ your loyall and dutifull Subject  
‘ *Thomas Sutton* of *Balsbam* in the Coun-  
‘ tie of *Cambridge* Esquire, that it may  
‘ please your most excellent Majestie, and  
‘ the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and  
‘ the Commons in this present Parliament  
‘ assembled, to enact, ordaine, and establish:  
‘ And be it enacted, ordained, and esta-  
‘ blished by the Authoritie aforesaid, that  
‘ in the Town of *Hallingburie*, otherwise  
‘ called *Hallinburie Bouchers* in the Coun-  
‘ tie of *Essex*, there may be builded and  
‘ erected (at the Costs and Charges of your  
‘ Suppliant) one meet, fit, and convenient  
‘ House, Buildings, and Rooms, for the  
‘ abiding and dwelling of such number of

*An Historical Account*

‘ poor People, Men and Children, as your  
 ‘ Suppliant shall name, limit, and appoint  
 ‘ to be lodged, harboured, abide, and be  
 ‘ relieved there : And for the abiding, dwell-  
 ‘ ling, and necessary Use of one School-  
 ‘ master and Usher to instruct the said Chil-  
 ‘ dren in Reading, Writing, and the *Latin*  
 ‘ and *Greek* Grammar ; and of one Divine  
 ‘ and godly Preacher to instruct and teach  
 ‘ all the rest of the same House in the know-  
 ‘ ledge of God and his Word ; and of one  
 ‘ Master to govern all these Persons of, in,  
 ‘ or belonging unto the same House ; and  
 ‘ that the same shall and may be called and  
 ‘ named the Hospital of King *James*, foun-  
 ‘ ded in *Hallingburie* in the County of  
 ‘ *Essex*, at the humble Petition, and at the  
 ‘ only Costs and Charges of *Thomas Sutton*  
 ‘ Esquire : And that the Right Rev. Father  
 ‘ in God, *Richard* now Archbishop of *Can-*  
 ‘ *terbury*, and his successors Archbishops  
 ‘ there, *Thomas* Lord *Ellesmere* Lord Chan-  
 ‘ cellor of *England*, and such as after him  
 ‘ shall succeed to be Lord Chancellors or  
 ‘ Lord Keepers of the great Seal of *Eng-*  
 ‘ *land*, for and during the Time they shall  
 ‘ so continue or be in the same Office, *Ro-*  
 ‘ *bert* Earl of *Salisbury* Lord high Trea-  
 ‘ surer of *England*, and such as after him  
 shall

shall succeed to be Treasurers of *England*,  
for and during the Time they shall conti-  
nue or be in the same Office, The Reve-  
rend Father in God *Launcelot* Bishop of  
*Ely*, and his Successors Bishops there, *Richard* Bishop of *Rochester*, and Deane of  
the Cathedrall Church of *Westminster*, and  
his Successours of and in the same Deanrie  
of *Westminster*, Sir *Thomas Foster*, Kt.  
one of the Justices of your Majesties Court  
of Common Pleas usually holden at *West-*  
*minster*, Sir *Henry Hobart*, Knight, your  
Majesties Attorney Generall, *John Over-*  
*all*, Doctor of Divinity, Deane of the Ca-  
thedral Church of *St. Paul* in *London*, and  
his Successors Deans there, *Henry Thurf-*  
*by*, Esquire, one of the Maisters of your  
Majesties Court of Chancerie, *Thomas*  
*Fortescue*, *Thomas Paget*, *Geffery Night-*  
*ingale*, and *Richard Sutton*, Esquires,  
*John Lawe* and *Thomas Browne*, Gen-  
tlemen, and such others as shall be from  
time to time for ever hereafter chosen and  
nominated in and to the Places and Steads  
of such of them as shall decease by your  
Suppliant during his Life, and after his De-  
cease by the most part of them which then  
shall be Governors of the said Hospitall,  
to be and succeed in and to the Place and  
Places

‘ Places of him and them deceasing, shall  
‘ and may be the Governours of the said  
‘ Hospitall and of the Members, Goods,  
‘ Lands, Revenues and Hereditaments of  
‘ the same at all Times hereafter for ever.  
‘ And that the same Governours and Hof-  
‘ pitall shall for ever hereafter stand and be  
‘ incorporated, established, and founded in  
‘ Name and in Deed a Body politike and  
‘ corporate, to have Continuance for ever,  
‘ by the Name of the Governours of the  
‘ Hospitall of King *James*, founded in *Hal-*  
‘ *lingbury*, in the County of *Essex*, at the  
‘ humble Petition, and at the only Costs  
‘ and Charges of *Thomas Sutton*, Esquire,  
‘ and that they the said Governours may have  
‘ a perpetual Succession, and that by that  
‘ Name they and their Suecessors may for  
‘ ever hereafter have, hold, and enjoy the  
‘ Manors, Lordships, Mesuages, Lands, Te-  
‘ nements, and Hereditaments hereafter  
‘ mentioned, without any Licence or Par-  
‘ don for any Alienation of them or any of  
‘ them, and without any Licence of or for  
‘ Mortmaine, or any other Law or Statute  
‘ to the contrarie notwithstanding: That is  
‘ to say, your Suppliant’s Manors and Lord-  
‘ ships of *Southminster*, *Norton*, *Little Hal-*  
‘ *lingbury alias Hallingbury Bouchers*, and  
‘ *Much*

Much *Stambridge*, in the County of *Essex*,  
 with all their and every of their Rights,  
 Members, and Appurtenances whatsoever;  
 And also all those your Suppliant's Manors  
 and Lordships of *Buslingthorpe* and *Dun-*  
*nesbye* in the County of *Lincoln*, with  
 their and either of their Rights, Members  
 and Appurtenances whatsoever; And also  
 all those your Suppliant's Manors of *Salt-*  
*hope alias Saltrop, Chilton and Black-*  
*grove*, with their and every of their Rights,  
 Members and Appurtenances in the said  
 County of *Wiltes*; And also all those  
 your Suppliant's Lands and Pasture Grounds  
 called *Blackegrove*, contayning by Esti-  
 mation Two Hundred Acres of Pasture,  
 with the Appurtenances in *Blackegrove*  
 and *Wroughton*, in the said Countie of  
*Wiltes*; And also all that your Suppliant's  
 Manor of *Mihenden*, otherwise called the  
 Manor of *Migunden*, in the Parishes of  
*Wroughton, Lygerd and Tregoce*, in the  
 said County of *Wiltes*; And all that your  
 Suppliant's Manor of *Elcombe*, and the  
 Parke called *Elcombe Parke*, in the said  
 Countie of *Wiltes*; And all that your  
 Suppliant's Manor of *Wattlefcote*, other-  
 wise called *Wigglescote*, otherwise called  
*Wiglescete*, otherwise called *Wikelsfete*, in  
 the

*An Historical Account*

' the said Countie of *Wiltes* ; And all that  
 ' your Suppliant's Manör of *Wescote* other-  
 ' wise called *Wescete*, with the Appurte-  
 ' nances, in the said Countie of *Wiltes* ;  
 ' And also all those your Suppliant's Lands  
 ' and Pastures, containing by Estimation  
 ' One Hundred Acres of Land, and three-  
 ' score Acres of Pasture in *Wigglescote* and  
 ' *Wroughton*, in the said Countie of *Wiltes* ;  
 ' And also all that your Suppliant's Manör  
 ' of *Uffcote*, with the Appurtenances, in the  
 ' said Countie of *Wiltes* ; And all those  
 ' your Suppliant's two Messuages and One  
 ' Thousand Acres of Land, Two thousand  
 ' Acres of Pasture, Three hundred Acres  
 ' of Meadow, and Three hundred Acres of  
 ' Wood, with the Appurtenances, in *Brode-*  
 ' *hinton*, in the said Countie of *Wiltes* ;  
 ' And also all those your Suppliant's Ma-  
 ' nors and Lordships of *Campes*, otherwise  
 ' called *Compes*, otherwise called *Campes*  
 ' *Castle*, otherwise called *Castle Campes*,  
 ' scituate, lying, being, and extending, in  
 ' the Counties of *Cambridge* and *Essex*, or  
 ' in either of them, or elsewhere within  
 ' the Realm of *England* ; And also all that  
 ' your Suppliant's Manör of *Balsbam*, in  
 ' the County of *Cambridge*, with all and  
 ' singular the Rights, Members and Appur-  
 tenances,



tenances thereof whatsoever ; And also all  
 that your Suppliant's Mesuage and Lands  
 scituate and being in the Parishes of *Hack-*  
*ney* and *Tottenham*, in the County of  
*Middlesex*, or in either of them, with  
 their and either of their Rights, Members  
 and Appurtenances whatsoever, which  
 said Mesuage was lately purchased of Sir  
*William Bowyer*, Knight, and the Lands  
 in *Tottenham* now or late in the Tenure  
 or Occupation of *William Benning*, Yeo-  
 man ; and also all and singular the Ma-  
 nors, Lordships, Mesuages, Lands, Tene-  
 ments, Reversions, Services, Meadows,  
 Pastures, Woods, Advowsons, Patronages  
 of Churches, and Hereditaments of your  
 Suppliant whatsoever, scituate lying or  
 being within the said Counties of *Essex*,  
*Lincolne*, *Wilt*, *Cambridge* and *Middle-*  
*sex*, or any of them, with all and every  
 their Rights, Members and Appurtenances  
 whatsoever : And also, all your Suppliant's  
 Letters Patents, Indentures, Deeds, Eviden-  
 ces, Bonds and Writings, concerning the  
 Premises, or any of them. And all such  
 Conditions, Warranties, Vouchers, Ac-  
 tions, Suites, Entries, Benefits, and De-  
 maunds, as shall or may be had by any  
 Person or Persons upon or by Reason of  
 them

‘ them or any of them ; except those your  
 ‘ Suppliant’s Manors or Lordships of *Little-*  
 ‘ *bury* and *Hadstocke*, in the said County of  
 ‘ *Essex* : And except all your Suppliant’s  
 ‘ Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments, in  
 ‘ *Littlebury* and *Hadstocke* aforesaid, or in  
 ‘ either of them, And that the saide Go-  
 ‘ vernours and their Successors, by the same  
 ‘ Name, shall and may have Power, Abilitie  
 ‘ and Capacitie, to demise, lease, and grant  
 ‘ their Possessions and Hereditaments, and  
 ‘ every of them, and to take, acquire, and  
 ‘ purchase, and to sue and be sued, and to  
 ‘ do, performe, and execure all and everie  
 ‘ other lawfull Act and Thing, good, ne-  
 ‘ cessarie, and profitable for the said Incor-  
 ‘ poration, in as full and ample Manner and  
 ‘ Forme, to all Intents, Constructions, and  
 ‘ Purposes, as any other Incorporations, or  
 ‘ Body politique or corporat, fully and  
 ‘ perfectly founded and incorporated, may  
 ‘ do. And that the same Governours and  
 ‘ their Successors for the Time being, may  
 ‘ have and use a common Seale for the ma-  
 ‘ king, graunting, and demising of such their  
 ‘ Demises and Leases, and for the doing of  
 ‘ all and every other Thing, touching or  
 ‘ in any wise concerning the said Incorpo-  
 ‘ ration ; in which Seale shall be engraven  
 ‘ the

the Armes of the said *Thomas Sutton*  
 your Suppliant: And also that it may bee  
 further enacted by the Aurtheritie afore-  
 said, and be it enacted by the Authoritie  
 aforesaid, that your Suppliant during his  
 Life, and the said Governours and their  
 Successors for the Time being, or the most  
 Part of them, after his Decease, shall and  
 may have full Power and lawful Authori-  
 tie to breake, alter and change the said  
 Seale: And that your said Orator during  
 his Life, and the said Governours and their  
 Successors for the Time being, or the most  
 Part of them, after his Decease, shall and  
 may have full Power and Authoritie to  
 nominate and appoint, and shall and may  
 nominate and appoint, when and as often  
 as he and they shall think good, such Per-  
 son and Persons as he and they shall think  
 meete to be Maister, Preacher, Schoole-  
 master, Usher, Poore Men, Poore Chil-  
 dren, and Officers of the said Hospitall;  
 and when any of them by Death, Resig-  
 nation, Deprivation, or otherwise, shall be-  
 come voide, shall and may within one  
 Month next after such Avoydance, by  
 Writing under their said common Seale,  
 nominate and appoint one or more lear-  
 ned godly, discreet and meet Men and  
 Persons,

Persons, to be Maister, Preacher, Schoole-  
master, Usher, Poore Men, Poore Chil-  
dren, and Officers, in the Places of them  
and every of them so deceasing, resigning,  
or otherwise becoming voide ; and that  
in case the said Governours, and their Suc-  
cessors for the Time being, or the most  
Part of them, shall not within one Month  
after such Avoydance make such Nomina-  
tion and Appointment, as aforesaid, that  
then, and so often, and in every such case,  
from and after the Decease of your said  
Orator, it shall and may be lawful to your  
Majestie, your Heirs and Successors, by  
your Letters Patents under the Great Seale  
of *England*, to nominate and appoint  
some meet, godly and learned Men in and  
to the Places voide, by such Defaulr of the  
said Governours and their Successors for  
the Time being, or the most Part of them,  
as is aforesaid : And that it shall and may  
be lawful to and for the said Maister,  
Preacher, Shoolemaster, Usher, Poor Peo-  
ple, Poor Children, and Officers of the  
said Hospitall, to remaine, assemble, bee,  
and cohabite together in the said House,  
Buildings, and Hospitall : And that it may  
be further enacted by the Authoritie afore-  
said, And be it enacted by the Authoritie  
aforesaid,

' aforeſaid, That your ſaid Suppliant during  
 ' his Life, and that the ſaid Governors and  
 ' their Succeſſors for the Time being, or the  
 ' moſt part of them, after his Deceſſe, ſhall  
 ' and may have full Power and Authoritie,  
 ' under the ſaid common Seale, to make,  
 ' ordaine, ſet downe, and preſcribe ſuch  
 ' Rules, Statutes and Ordinances, for the  
 ' Order, Rule, and Government of the ſaid  
 ' Hoſpittall; and of the ſaid Maſter, Prea-  
 ' cher, Schoolemaſter, Uſher, poore Men,  
 ' poore Children, and Officers, and their  
 ' Succeſſors, and for their and every of their  
 ' Stipends and Allowances, for or towards  
 ' their or any of their Maintenance and Re-  
 ' lief, as to your ſaid Suppliant during his  
 ' Life, and the ſaid Governors and their Suc-  
 ' ceſſors for the Time being, or the moſt  
 ' Part of them, after his Deceſſe, ſhall ſeem  
 ' meete and convenient ; and that the ſame  
 ' Orders, Rules, Statutes and Ordinances ſo  
 ' by him, them, or any of them made, ſet  
 ' down, and preſcribed as aforeſaid, ſhall be  
 ' and ſtand in full Force and Strength in  
 ' Law, the ſame not being repugnant nor  
 ' contrarie to your Majeſties Prerogative  
 ' Royal, nor to the Laws or Statutes of this  
 ' your Majeſties Realme of *England*, nor to  
 ' any Eccleſiaſtical Canons or Conſtitutions

‘ of the Church of *England* then in Force  
 ‘ and Use : And that your Suppliant during  
 ‘ his Life, and the said Governors and their  
 ‘ Successors for the Time being, or the most  
 ‘ Part of them, and such of them as your Sup-  
 ‘ pliant shall thereto appoint and nominate,  
 ‘ shall and may, after the Decease of your  
 ‘ said Suppliant, have Power and Authoritie  
 ‘ to visit the said Hospitall, and to order, re-  
 ‘ forme, and redresse all Disorders and Abu-  
 ‘ ses in and touching the Government and  
 ‘ disposing of the same ; and further, to cen-  
 ‘ sure, suspend and deprive the said Maister,  
 ‘ Preacher, Shoolemaster, Usher, poore  
 ‘ Men, poore Children, and Officers for the  
 ‘ Time being, and everie or any of them, as  
 ‘ to him and them shall seem just, fit and  
 ‘ convenient ; so always that no Visitation,  
 ‘ Act or Thing, in or touching the same, be  
 ‘ had, made or done, other than by your  
 ‘ Suppliant during his Life, or the said Go-  
 ‘ vernors and their Successors for the Time  
 ‘ being, or the most Part of them after his  
 ‘ Decease, or by such of them as your Sup-  
 ‘ pliant shall thereunto nominate and ap-  
 ‘ point : And also that it may be further en-  
 ‘ acted by the Authoritie aforesaid ; and be  
 ‘ it enacted by the Authoritie aforesaid, That  
 ‘ the said Preacher and Minister of the Word  
 ‘ of

of God which shall be placed in the said  
 Hospitall, to and for the Uses and Pur-  
 poses aforesaid, from Time to Time here-  
 after, shall and may enter into, have, hold,  
 and enjoy the Rectory and Parsonage of  
*Hallingburie* aforesaid, in and to his own  
 proper Use and Behoofe, for and during  
 so long Time as he shall be Preacher and  
 Minister there, without any other Presen-  
 tation or Admission, Institution or Induc-  
 tion ; and that no Lease shall hereafter be  
 made of the said Parsonage, or of any Part  
 or Portion thereof, other than such as shall  
 determine and end when and as soon as  
 any such Person as shall be the Preacher or  
 Minister of and in the said Hospitall, when  
 the same Lease shall be made, shall decease  
 or resign, leave, or be put out and remo-  
 ved from the said Place of Preacher or  
 Minister of and in the said Hospital ; sa-  
 ving always, and reserving to your Maje-  
 stie, your Heirs and Successors, and to all  
 and everie other Person and Persons, Bo-  
 dies Politique and Corporate, their Heirs  
 and Successors, other than your Suppliant  
 and his Heirs, and the Person and Persons  
 from whom the same were purchased, and  
 their Heirs, claiming only as Heirs, all such  
 Estate, Right, Title, Condition, Claime,

‘ Possession, Rents, Services, Commons,  
 ‘ Demaunds, Actions, Remedies, Recoveries,  
 ‘ Termes, Interests, Forfeits, Commodities,  
 ‘ Advantages and Hereditaments whatso-  
 ‘ ever, which they or any of them shall or  
 ‘ may have, or of Right ought to have, of,  
 ‘ in, to, or out of the Premises, or any of  
 ‘ them, or any Part thereof, as if this Act  
 ‘ had never been had or made, other than  
 ‘ Fine or Fines of or for any Alienation of  
 ‘ the Premises, or any Part or Parcel there-  
 ‘ of and other than Respits of Homage, or  
 ‘ Fines for Non-payment of Respit of Ho-  
 ‘ mage at any Time hereafter to be deman-  
 ‘ ded, and other than Title and Right of  
 ‘ Libertie or Liberties to enter into the same,  
 ‘ or any of them, for or by Reason of any  
 ‘ Statute heretofore made for, concerning  
 ‘ or against any Alienation or Mortmaine.

*Concordat cum Originali.*

Ro. Bowyer, *Cler. Parl.*



*The Deed of Sale of Charter-  
House to Mr. SUTTON.*

THIS Indenture made the Ninth Chart.  
Day of *May*, in the 9th Yeere of Evid.  
the Reigne of our soveraigne Lord *James*, House.  
by the Grace of God, King of *England*,  
*France* and *Ireland*, Defender of the Faith,  
&c. and of *Scotland* the Foure and for-  
tieth, Between the Right Honourable *Tho-*  
*mas* Earle of *Suffolke*, Lord Chamberlaine of  
the King's Majesties most honourable  
Houhold, the Right Honourable *Theo-*  
*philus* Lord *Howard*, Sonne and Heire  
apparent of the said Earle of *Suffolke*, the  
Right Honourable *Thomas* Earle of *Arun-*  
*del* and *Surry*, and the Right Honourable  
*William* Lord *Howard* of *Narward* in the  
Countie of *Cumberland*, on the one Par-  
ty, and *Thomas Sutton* of *Balsbam*, in  
the Countie of *Cambridge*, Esquire, on the  
other Party, Witnesseeth, That the said  
Right Honourable *Thomas* Earle of *Suf-*  
*folke*, *Theophilus* Lord *Howard*, *Thomas*  
Earle of *Arundel* and *Surry*, and *Willi-*  
*am* Lord *Howard*, for and in Confide-  
ration of the Sum of Thirteen thousand

‘ Pounds of good and lawful Money of  
 ‘ *England*, to the said *Thomas Earle of Suffolke*  
 ‘ in hand before the enfealing and  
 ‘ Delivery of these Presents by the said *Thomas Sutton*  
 ‘ well and truly satisfied, contented and paid,  
 ‘ whereof and wherewith  
 ‘ they and every of them acknowledge themselves  
 ‘ fully satisfied, contented and paid,  
 ‘ and thereof, and of every Part and Parcel  
 ‘ thereof do cleerly acquite, exonerate and  
 ‘ discharge the said *Thomas Sutton*, his  
 ‘ Heirs, Executors, and Administrators, and  
 ‘ every of them for ever by these Presents,  
 ‘ have graunted, aliened, bargained, sold,  
 ‘ conveyed and confirmed, and by these  
 ‘ Presents do for them and their Heirs, fully,  
 ‘ cleerly and absolutely graunt, alien,  
 ‘ bargain, sell, convey, and confirme unto  
 ‘ the said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heirs and Assignes  
 ‘ for ever, all that capital Mesuage or Mansion-house,  
 ‘ commonly call’d or known by the Name of  
 ‘ *Howard-house*, otherwise called the late dissolved  
 ‘ *Charter-house* besides *Smithfield*, situate and being  
 ‘ within the Countie of *Middlesex*, with all and  
 ‘ singular the Rights, Members and Appurtenances  
 ‘ thereunto belonging and appertaining; and all that  
 ‘ Orchard and Garden, with the Appurtenances  
 ‘ thereunto likewise

' wife belonging and appertaining, and all  
 ' that parcel of Land and Ground, with the  
 ' Appurtenances, commonly called *Pardon*  
 ' *Church yard* ; and all those two Mesuages  
 ' or Tenements, and two Closes of Land  
 ' and Ground with the Appurtenances there-  
 ' unto adjoining, commonly called *Wel-*  
 ' *becke*, situate lying and being in the said  
 ' Countie of *Middlesex* ; and also all and  
 ' singular Mesuages, Houses, Edifices, Build-  
 ' ings, Barns, Stables, Dove-houses, Courts,  
 ' Folds, Curtelages, Yards, Orchards, Gar-  
 ' dens, Shops, Sellars, Sollers, Closes, Inclo-  
 ' sures, waste Grounds, Tithes, Oblations,  
 ' Obventions, Fruits, Profits, Alterages,  
 ' Wayes, Waters, Rents, Reversions, Servi-  
 ' ces, Waifes, Straies, Goods of Felons, Out-  
 ' laws and Fugitives, and all other Franchi-  
 ' ses, Liberties, Priviledges, Jurifdictions,  
 ' Profits, Emoluments, Commodities, Here-  
 ' ditaments, and Appurtenances whatsoever,  
 ' by what Name or Names soever the same  
 ' be called or knowne, to the said ca-  
 ' pital Mesuage or Mansion-house called  
 ' *Howard-house*, or the late dissolved *Char-*  
 ' *ter-house* besides *Smithfield*, and other the  
 ' before-mentioned Premisses, and to every  
 ' or any of them lying, belonging, or in any  
 ' wise appertaining, or to or with the same,

‘ every, or any of them usually held, occu-  
 ‘ pied or enjoyed, or accepted, reputed, ta-  
 ‘ ken, knowne, demised, used, or letten as  
 ‘ Part, Parcel, or Member of them, or any of  
 ‘ them ; and also the Reversion and Rever-  
 ‘ sions, Remainder and Remainders whatso-  
 ‘ ever of all and singular the Premisses with  
 ‘ the Appurtenances, and all Rents and year-  
 ‘ ly Profits whatsoever reserved upon any  
 ‘ Demise, Lease, Estate, or Grant, Demises,  
 ‘ Leases, Estates, or Grants heretofore made  
 ‘ or granted of the before-mentioned Pre-  
 ‘ misses, or of any Part or Parcel thereof ;  
 ‘ and also all the Estate, Right, Title, Inte-  
 ‘ rest, Use, Possession, Reversion, Remainder,  
 ‘ Claim and Demand whatsoever of them  
 ‘ the said *Thomas* Earl of *Suffolk*, *Theophi-*  
 ‘ *lus* Lord *Howard*, *Thomas* Earle of *Arun-*  
 ‘ *del* and *Surry*, and *William* Lord *Howard*,  
 ‘ of and every of them, of, in, or unto the said  
 ‘ capital Messuage or Mansion-house com-  
 ‘ monly called *Howard-house*, or the late  
 ‘ dissolved *Charter-house* beside *Smithfield*,  
 ‘ and other the before-mentioned Premisses,  
 ‘ or of, in, or unto every or any Part or  
 ‘ Parcel thereof. And further the said  
 ‘ Right Honourable *Thomas* Earl of *Suffolk*,  
 ‘ *Theophilus* Lord *Howard*, *Thomas* Earl  
 ‘ of *Arundel* and *Surry*, and *William* Lord  
 ‘ *How-*

*Howard*, for the Considerations aforesaid,  
have granted, bargained, sould, and by  
these Present do grant, bargain and sell un-  
to the said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heirs and  
Assignes for ever, all and every the Deeds,  
Evidences, Charters, Writings, Counter-  
paines of Lease and Leases, Indentures,  
Exemplifications, Letters Patents, Tran-  
scripts of Fines and Recoveries, Terrers,  
Court-rolls, Surveys, Presentments, Boun-  
daries, Escripts, and Miniments whatso-  
ever, touching or in any wise only con-  
cerning the said capital Messuage or Man-  
sion-house, and other and before men-  
tioned Premisses, or any part or parcel  
thereof only, To Have and to Hold the  
said capital Messuage or Mansion-house  
called *Howard-house*, or the late dissolved  
*Charter-house* besides *Smithfield*, Houses,  
Buildings, Orchards, Gardens, Closes, In-  
closures, Tenements and Hereditaments,  
and all other the Premisses before in, or  
by these Presents bargained and sold, or  
mentioned intended, and meant to be  
bargained and sold, and every part and  
parcel thereof, with the Appurtenances,  
unto the said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heirs  
and Assignes for ever, to the sole, only and  
proper Use and Behoof of him the said

*Tho-*

‘ *mas Sutton*, his Heirs and Assignes for  
 ‘ evermore, absolutely, without any Man-  
 ‘ ner of Condition, Redemption, or Revo-  
 ‘ cation in any wise. And the said *Thomas*  
 ‘ Earle of *Suffolke* and his Heirs, the said  
 ‘ capital Messuage or Mansion-house called  
 ‘ *Howard-house*, or the *Charter-house*, and  
 ‘ all and singular other the before-mention-  
 ‘ ed premisses, with all their and every of  
 ‘ their Appurtenances, and every part and  
 ‘ parcel thereof, unto the said *Thomas Sut-*  
 ‘ *ton*, his Heirs and Assignes for ever, in  
 ‘ Manner and Form aforesaid, against him  
 ‘ the said *Thomas* Earle of *Suffolke*, and his  
 ‘ Heirs, and all and every other person and  
 ‘ persons lawfully claiming by, from, or  
 ‘ under him, shall and will warrant, and  
 ‘ for evermore defend by these Presents :  
 ‘ And the said *Theophilus* Lord *Howard*,  
 ‘ and his Heirs, the said capital Messuage  
 ‘ or Mansion-house called *Howard-house*  
 ‘ or the *Charter-house*, and all and singular  
 ‘ other the before-mentioned Premisses, and  
 ‘ every part and parcel thereof, with the  
 ‘ Appurtenances, unto the said *Thomas*  
 ‘ *Sutton*, his Heirs and Assignes for ever,  
 ‘ in Manner and Forme aforesaid, against  
 ‘ him the said *Theophilus* Lord *Howard*,  
 ‘ and his Heirs, and all and every other  
 ‘ Person

Person and Persons lawfully claiming by,  
 from, or under him, shall and will war-  
 rant and for evermore defend by these Pre-  
 sents : And the said *Thomas* Earle of *A-*  
*rundel* and *Surry*, and his Heirs, the said  
 capital Messuage or Mansion-house called  
*Howard house*, or the *Charter-house*, and  
 all and singular other the before-mention-  
 ed Premisses, and every part and parcel  
 thereof with the Appurtenances, unto the  
 said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heirs and Assignes  
 for ever, in Manner and Forme aforesaid,  
 against the said *Thomas* Earle of *Arundel*  
 and *Surry*, and his Heirs, and all and eve-  
 ry other Person and Persons lawfully  
 claiming by, from, or under him, shall and  
 will warrant, and for evermore defend by  
 these Presents : And the said *William*  
 Lord *Howard*, and his Heirs, the said ca-  
 pital Messuage or Mansion-house called  
*Howard-house*, or the *Charter-house*, and  
 all and singular other the before-mention-  
 ed Premisses, and every part and parcel  
 thereof, with the Appurtenances, unto the  
 said *Thomas Sutton*, his Heirs and Assignes  
 for ever, in Manner and Form aforesaid,  
 against him the said *William* Lord *How-*  
*ard*, and his Heirs, and all and every other  
 person and persons lawfully claiming by,  
 from

‘ from, or under him, shall and will warrant  
 ‘ and for ever defend by these Presents :  
 ‘ In Witness whereof, the parties above-  
 ‘ named to these present Indentures inter-  
 ‘ changeably have set their Hand and Seales  
 ‘ the Day and Yeere first above-written,  
 ‘ 1611.

*Inquisitio post Mortem Thomæ Sutton, Armigeri*

*Arch.*  
*Cur.*  
*Lan.*

**I**Nquisitio indentata capta apud *Wigan*,  
 in Comitatu *Lancastriæ* 25<sup>o</sup> die *Augusti*,  
 anno Regni Domini *Jacobi* Dei Gratiâ  
 Regis *Angliæ, Franciæ & Hiberniæ*, Fi-  
 dei Defensoris, &c. decimo tertio, & *Scotiæ*  
 quadragesimo nono, coram *Edvardo Rig-  
 bye* Armigero, Esceatore Domini Regis in  
 Comitatu prædicto, virtute Brevis dicti Do-  
 mini Regis de Mandamus eidem Esceatori  
 directi, et huic Inquisitioni annexæ ad in-  
 quirendum post mortem *Thomæ Sutton* Ar-  
 migeri defuncti per Sacramentum *Hugonis*  
*Adlington*, &c. Juratorum; qui dicunt su-  
 per Sacramentum suum, quod diu ante obi-  
 tum *Thomæ Sutton*, Armigeri, in Brevi præ-  
 dicto nominati, quidam *Edvardus Tarbock*,  
 nuper de *Tarbocke*, in Comitatu *Lancastriæ*  
 Miles,



Miles, *Edvardus Tarbock*, Armiger, & *Georgius Tarbock*, Generosus, seifiti fuerunt in Dominico suo ut de Feodo de et in Manerio de *Tarbocke* cum pertinentiis, ac de & in 45 Messuagiis, 3 Molendinis, 1 Columbario, 50 Gardinis, 500 acris Terræ, 200 acris Prati, 600 acris Pasturæ, 200 acris Bosci, 40 acris Bryer, 60 acris more cum pertinentiis in *Tarbocke* prædicto, *Whiston* & *Cronton* in Comitatu prædicto. Ac de et in Reçtoria de *Huyton* in Comitatu prædicto, & de & in 3 Messuagiis, 3 Gardinis, 10 acris Terræ, 4 acris Prati, & 20 acris Pasturæ, & de decimis Granorum, Bladorum, Garbarum & Fœni, cum pertinentiis annuatim de tempore in tempus crescentium, renovantium, et provenientium in *Huyton* prædicto, *Roby*, *Wolfall*, *Knowesley*, et *Tarbocke* prædicto, in Comitatu prædicto ; et sic inde seifiti existentes iidem *Edvardus Tarbocke*, *Edvardus Tarbocke*, *Georgius Tarbocke*, postea 22<sup>o</sup> die *Maii*, anno Regni dicti Domini Regis nunc *Angliæ* nono, pro & in consideratione Summæ 9300 *l.* eidem *Edvardo Tarbocke*, *Edvardo Tarbocke*, & *Georgio Tarbocke*, per prædictum *Thomam Sutton* at tunc bene & fideliter solutarum per quandam Indenturam Sigillis prædictorum *Edvardi Tarbocke*, *Edvardi Tarbocke*, et *Geor-*

*gii Tarbocke* signatam, cuius datum est eisdem die, & anno, ac in rotulatio in Curia Cancellariæ dicti Domini Regis *Angliæ* infra sex Menses tunc proximè sequentes, ad requisitionem et denominationem prædicti *Thomæ Sutton* concesserunt, barganifaverunt, & vendiderunt quibusdam *Thomæ Wheeler* & *Roberto Maskell*, Hæredibus & Assignatis suis, Maneria, Terras, Tenementa, Rectoriā, Decimas, & Hereditamenta prædicta cum pertinentiis habenda & tenenda. Quæ quidem Conveiantia, Barganizatio & Venditio habitæ & factæ fuerunt super Confidentiam, quam prædictus *Thomas Sutton* posuit & habebat in prædictis *Thomæ Wheeler* & *Roberto Maskell*, et ad intentionem, et propositum, quod prædictus *Thomas Sutton* Hæredes, & Assignati sui haberent, et gauderent Maneria, Terras, Tenementa, Rectoriā, Decimas, et Hereditamenta prædicta, cum Pertinentiis suis in perpetuum. Et ulterius Juratores super Sacramentum suum dicunt, quod postea, et antequam aliqua Convenientia prædicti Manerii, Terrarum, Tenementorum, et Hereditamentorum prædictorum, cum pertinentiis, vel alicujus inde parcella, habita aut facta fuit per Præfatos *Thomam Wheeler* & *Robertum Maskell*, vel eorum alterum, Hæredes & Assignatos suos, vel eorum aliquem

Præfato

Præfato *Thomæ Sutton*; Præfatus *Thomas Sutton* in Brevi præd. nominatus, apud *Hackney*, in Comitatu *Middlesex*, 12<sup>o</sup> die *Decembris*, Anno Regni dicti Domini Regis nunc *Angliæ* nono, obiit sine Exitu de corpore suo procreato. Et Juratotes ulterius super Sacramentum suum dicunt, quod prædictum Manerium de *Tarbocke*, et prædicta Terræ, Tenementa, et Hæreditamenta, cum pertinentiis in *Tarbocke* prædicto tenentur, et tempore Mortis prædicti *Thomæ Sutton* tenebantur de *Willelmo* Comite de *Derbie*, ut de Manerio suo de *Knowesley* per redditum 6 s. 8 d. per Annum, et per Servitium militare, videlicet, per tertiam partem unius Feodi militis, et valent per Annum in omnibus exitibus ultra reprizas 20 l. Et quod prædicta Terra, Tenementa, et Hæreditamenta, cum pertinentiis in *Cronton* prædicto tenentur, et in tempore Mortis prædicti *Thomæ Sutton* tenebantur de Assignatis *Thomæ Brooke* Armigeri, ut de Manerio suo de *Cronton* in Soccagio per Fidelitatem tantum pro omnibus Servitiis et Demandis, et valent per Annum in omnibus Exitibus ultra Reprizas 5 s. Et quod prædicta Tenementa in *Whiston* prædicto tenentur, et in tempore mortis prædicti *Thomæ Sutton* tenebantur de *Henrico Gyle*, Armigero, ut de Manerio

Manerio suo de *Whiston* in Comitatu prædicto per Fidelitatem et redditum - - -. Et quod prædicta Rectoria de *Huyton*, et prædicta Terræ, Tenementa, Decimæ, et Hæreditamenta cum pertinentiis in *Huyton*, *Wolfall*, *Roby*, *Knowesley* et *Tarbocke* prædictis tenentur, et in tempore Mortis prædicti *Thomæ Sutton* tenebantur de Domino Rege, ut de Honore suo *Lancastriæ* in Comitatu Palatino *Lancastriæ* per Fidelitatem tantum in Soccagio, et non in Capite, nec per Servitium militare; et valent per Annum in omnibus Exitibus ultra Reprisas 20 *l*.

Et ulterius Juratores super Sacramentum suum dicunt, quod *Simon Baxter*, de *London*, Armiger, est Confanguineus, et Hæres prædicti *Thomæ Sutton* in prædicto Brevi nominati, *viz.* Filius et Hæres *Dorotheæ* sororis Sororis prædicti *Thomæ Sutton*, et est Ætatis die Captionis hujus Inquisitionis 50 Annorum, et amplius; et quod prædictus *Simon Baxter* à tempore mortis prædicti *Thomæ Sutton* occupavit Terras et Tenementa prædicta, usque ad 20 die *Julii* anno 12<sup>o</sup> Regis nunc *Angliæ*, &c. et exitus et proficua inde percepit. Et quod *Richardus Mollineux*, Miles et Baronettus, post prædictum 20<sup>um</sup> diem *Julii* usque ad diem Captionis hujus Inquisitionis, Terras et Tenementa

menta prædicta occupavit, et exitus et proficua inde percepit. Et quod prædictus *Thomas Sutton* in Brevi prædicto nominatus nulla alia sive plura Maneria, Messuagia, Terras, Tenementa, seu Hæreditamenta habuit, seu tenuit de dicto Domino Rege, sive de aliquo alio, sive aliquibus aliis dicto die quo obiit, in dicto Comitatu *Lancastriæ*, aliter quam ut supra dictum est. In cujus Rei Testimonium uni parti hujus Inquisitionis tam præfatus Escaetor, quam Juratores, Sigilla sua apposuerunt; alteri vero parti hujus Inquisitionis penes Juratores remanenti præfatus Escaetor Sigillum suum posuit. Datum die et loco primò supradictis.

*Ed. Rigbië, Escaetor.*

*Fidelitates & Juramenta per Monachos & Conventus diversorum Ordinum Regi præstita.*

‘ **Q**UUM ea sit non solum Christiana-  
 ‘ næ Religionis & Pietatis ratio, sed  
 ‘ nostræ etiam Obedientiæ regula, ut Domi-  
 ‘ no nostro *Henrico* ejus Nominis octavo,  
 ‘ cui uni, & soli post Christum Jesum Ser-  
 R vatore

Rymeri  
 Foedera,  
 Tom. xiv.  
 p. 487.  
 Ann. Dom.  
 1534.

' vatorem nostrum debemus universa, non  
 ' modo omnimodam in Christo, & eandem  
 ' sinceram integram perpetuamque animi  
 ' Devotionem, Fidem, Observantiam, Hono-  
 ' rem Cultum, Reverentiam præstemus; sed  
 ' etiam de eâdem Fide & Observantiâ nostra  
 ' rationem, quotiescumq; postulabitur, red-  
 ' damus, et palam omnibus, si res poscat, li-  
 ' bentissime testemur. Noverint Universi  
 ' ad quos præsens Scriptum pervenerit, Quod  
 ' Nos, &c. uno ore et voce, atque unanimi  
 ' omnium consensu & assensu hoc Scripto  
 ' nostro sub sigillis nostris communibus in  
 ' Domibus nostris Capitularibus dato, pro no-  
 ' bis & Successoribus nostris omnibus et sin-  
 ' gulis in perpetuum profiteamur, testamur,  
 ' ac fideliter promittimus, et spondimus.  
 ' Nos, &c. semper præstatueros erga Domi-  
 ' num Regem nostrum *Henricum* Octavum,  
 ' et erga serenissimam Reginam *Annam* Ux-  
 ' orem ejusdem, et erga castum, sanctumq;  
 ' Matrimonium nuper non solum inter eos-  
 ' dem justè & legitimè contractum ratum &  
 ' consummatum; sed etiam tam in duabus  
 ' Convocationibus Cleri, quam in Parlia-  
 ' mento Dominorum Spiritualium et Tem-  
 ' poralium, atque Communium in eodem  
 ' Parlamento congregatorum, & præsentium  
 ' determinatum; et per *Thomam Cantuari-*  
 ' *ensem*

‘ *ensem* Archiepiscopum solemniter confir-  
 ‘ matum, et erga quamcunque aliam ejusdem  
 ‘ *Henrici* Regis nostri Uxorem post mortem  
 ‘ prædictæ *Annæ* nunc Uxoris ejus legitimè  
 ‘ ducendam, et erga Sobolem dicti Domini  
 ‘ Regis ex aliâ quâcunque legitimâ Uxore  
 ‘ post mortem ejusdem *Annæ* legitimè pro-  
 ‘ generandam, et quod hæc eadem Populo  
 ‘ notificabimus, prædicabimus, et suadebi-  
 ‘ mus, ubicunque dabetur Locus et Occasio.

‘ *Item*, quod confirmatum ratumque ha-  
 ‘ bemus semperque et perpetuò habituri  
 ‘ sumus, quòd prædictus Rex noster *Henri-*  
 ‘ *cus* est CAPUT ECCLELESIAE ANGLI-  
 ‘ CANAE.

‘ *Item*, quod Episcopus *Romanus*, qui in  
 ‘ suis Bullis Papæ nomen usurpat, et summi  
 ‘ Pontificis principatum sibi arrogat, nihilo  
 ‘ majoris neque auctoritatis, ac jurisdictionis  
 ‘ habendus sit quam cæteri quivis Episcopi  
 ‘ in *Anglia* vel alibi gentium in sua quisq;  
 ‘ Diœcesi.

‘ *Item*, quod soli dicto Domino Regi et  
 ‘ Successoribus adhærebimus, atque ejus De-  
 ‘ creta et Proclamationes, insuper omnes *An-*  
 ‘ *gliae* Leges, atque etiam Statuta omnia,  
 ‘ in Parlamento, et per Parlamentum De-  
 ‘ creta confirmata, stabilita et ratificata per-  
 ‘ petuò manutenebimus Episcopi *Romani*

‘ Legibus, Decretis, & Canonibus, si qui contra Legem Divinam; et sacram Scripturam esse invenientur, in perpetuum renuntiantes.

*Item*, quod nullus nostrum omnium in ulla vel privata vel publica Concione quicquam ex sacris Scripturis desumptum ad alienum Sensum detorquere præsumet, sed quisque Christum ejus Verba, et facta simpliciter apertè, sincerè, et ad Normam seu Regulam sacrarum Scripturarum, et verè Catholicorum atque Orthodoxorum Doctorum prædicabit catholicè et orthodoxè.

‘ *Item*, quod unusquisque in suis Orationibus, et Comprecationibus de more faciendis, primum omnium Regem tanquam *Supremum Caput Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ* Deo et Populi precibus commendabit, deinde Reginam cum sua Sobole, tum demum Archiepiscopum *Cantuariensem*, cum cæteris Cleri Ordinibus prout videbitur.

‘ *Item*, quod omnes & singuli prædicti Priores et Conventus, et Successores nostri Conscientiæ, et jurisjurandi Sacramento nosmet firmiter obligamus, quod omnia et singula prædicta fideliter in perpetuum observabimus. In cujus Rei Testimonium, &c.



*De Juramentis Commorantium infra Domum vocatam the Charter-House.*

‘ **M**emorandum, quod vicesimo nono Rymer's  
 ‘ die Mensis *Maii*, anno Regni Foedera,  
 ‘ Illustrissimi in Christo Principis, et Domini Tom. xiv.  
 ‘ ni nostri Domini *Henrici* Octavi, Dei P. 49<sup>1</sup>.  
 ‘ Gratiâ, *Angliæ & Franciæ* Regis, Fidei  
 ‘ Defensoris, et Domini *Hiberniæ* Vicesimo  
 ‘ sexto.

‘ Nos *Rolandus Lee*, *Covent. & Lichfel-*  
 ‘ *den.* Episcopus, & *Thomas Bedyll*, Cle-  
 ‘ ricus.

‘ In Domo Capitulari infra Domum Salu-  
 ‘ tationis Matris Dei, vulgariter vocatam the  
 ‘ *Charter-house*, juxta *Londoniam*, auctori-  
 ‘ tate et Vigore Literarum Patentium dicti  
 ‘ Illustrissimi Domini nostri Regis nobis di-  
 ‘ rectarum, quibus præsens Certificatorium  
 ‘ annectitur.

‘ Recepimus Juramenta, & Fidelitates tam  
 ‘ Monachorum, quam etiam aliorum Ser-  
 ‘ vientium infra septa dictæ Domûs Com-  
 ‘ morantium, qui coram nobis juxta For-  
 ‘ mam et Effectum in quadam Scedula præ-

‘ fatis Litteris Regiis Patentibus etiam an-  
 ‘ annexa Juramenta Corporalia et Fidelita-  
 ‘ tes tactis sacrosanctis Dei Evangeliiis præ-  
 ‘ stiterunt et jurarunt.

‘ Quorum quidem Juratorum Nomina, et  
 ‘ Cognomina sequuntur.

‘ Quæ omnia, & singula sic ut præmitti-  
 ‘ tur per nos gesta vestræ Regiæ Majestati  
 ‘ vera fuisse, & esse certificamus per præsen-  
 ‘ tes Sigillis nostris figillatas.

Dompnus *Johannes Howgton*, Prior.

Dompnus *Johannes Whetham*.

Dompnus *Edmundus Sterne*.

Dompnus *Johannes Enys*.

Dompnus *Willielmus Wayt*.

Dompnus *Humfridus Midylmore*, Procu-  
 rator.

Nomina Serventium et Commorantium in-  
 fra septa ejusdem Domus.

Dominus *Johannes Heth*.

Dominus *Willielmus Barker*.

*John Beddyll*.

*Wyllielmus Rodon*.

*Henry Clarke*.

*Nycolas Horlyston*.

*Nycolas Robarts*.

*Crystofer More*.

*Item,*

‘ *Item*, Sexto die Mensis Junii, anno  
 ‘ Regni Regis *Henrici* Octavi, et Loco  
 ‘ supra dictis.

‘ Nos *Rolandus Lee*, Coven. & Lich.  
 ‘ Episcopus antedictus, et *Thomas Kytson*,  
 ‘ Miles, Vigore et Auctoritate aliarum Lit-  
 ‘ terarum Patentium ultrà Litteras illas Pa-  
 ‘ tentes superius mentionatas, nobis in hac  
 ‘ parte directarum quibus hoc præsens  
 ‘ Certificatorium annectitur. Recepimus  
 ‘ Juramenta, & Fidelitates tam Mona-  
 ‘ chorum, quam etiam aliorum Serven-  
 ‘ tium infra dictam Domum Commo-  
 ‘ rantium, qui coram nobis juxta Formam  
 ‘ & Effectum cujusdam Scedulæ præfatis  
 ‘ Litteris Patentibus etiam annexæ, Juramen-  
 ‘ ta corporalia, & Fidelitates tactis sacro-  
 ‘ sanctis Dei Evangeliiis præstitetunt, & ju-  
 ‘ rarunt.

‘ Quorum quidem sic Juratorum Nomi-  
 ‘ mina & Cognomina sequuntur.

# P R E S B I T E R I.

*Willielmus Brooke.*

*Bartholomeus Burgoyne.*

*Jacobus Walwerke.*

*Ricardus Bere.*

*Georgius Bekerey.*

*An Historical Account**Henricus Hawte.**Willielmus Exmewe.**Thomas Jonson.**Johannes Darley.**Johannes Fox.**Sebastianus Nudigate.**Johannes Rochestre.**Everardus Dyckby.**Johannes Bulleyne.**Oliverus Batemanson.**Nicolaus Rawlyns.**Robertus Raby.**Andreas Boorde.**Thomas Salter.**Professi et non Sacerdotes.**Johannes Nycholson,**Mauritius Channey.**Johannes Davy.**CONVERSI.**Willielmus Grenewode.**Thomas Scryven.**Robertus Billingsley.**Robertus Salte.**Thomas Clogger,**Johannes Bykerton.**Thomas*

*Thomas Owen.*

*Robertus Pynchebeck.*

*Walterus Pierſon.*

*Johannes Scoffyn.*

*Thomas Redyng.*

*Willielmus Horne.*

*Robertus Cardyn.*

R. Cov. & Lich.

Thomas Bedyll.

### *De Carthusianis.*

WE the Prior and Convent of the  
 ' Howſe of the Salutation of our  
 ' Lady of th' Ordre of *Cartuſiens* nigh *Lon-*  
 ' *don*, and the Convent of the ſame, ſweare,  
 ' That from henceforth we ſhall utterly re-  
 ' nounce, reſuſe, relinquish and forſake the  
 ' Biſhop of *Rome*, and his Authoritie, Powre  
 ' and Jurisdiction.  
 ' And that we will never conſent nor  
 ' agree, that the Biſhop of *Rome* ſhall ex-  
 ' erciſe or have any Maner of Authoritie,  
 ' Jurisdiction or Powre within this Realme,  
 ' or any other the Kyng's Dominions, but  
 ' that we ſhall reſiſt the ſame at all Tymes to  
 ' the uttermoſt of our Powre.

Rymeri  
 Foedera,  
 Tom. xiv.  
 p. 588.

' And

*An Historical Account*

‘ And that from henceforth we shall accept, repute, and take the King’s Majestie to be the only Supreme Hedd in Erthe of the Church of *Englande*.

‘ And that to our Cunning, Wytte and uttermost of our Powre, without Gyle, Fraude, or other undew Means, we shall observe, kepe, maynteyn, and defende the holé Effectes, and Contentes of all and singular Acts and Statutes made, and to be made within this Realme, in Derogation, Extirpation, and Extinguishment of the Bishop of *Rome*, and his Authoritie, and all other Acts and Statutes made, and to be made in Reformation, and Corroboration of the Kyng’s Powre of *Supreme Hedd in Erthe of the Church of Englande*, and this we shall doe against all manner of Persons of what Estate, Dignitie, Degree, or Condition whatsoever they be, and in no wise do or attempte, nor in oure powre further to be done or attempted, directly or indirectly, any Thing, or Things, prively or apartely, to the Lett, Hynderance, Damage, or Derogation thereof, or of any Parte thereof, by any Maner of Means, or for any Maner of Pretence.

‘ And in case any Othe be made, or hath been made by us to any Parson or Parsons in

‘ Mayn-

Mayntenaunce, Defense, or Favor of the  
Bishopp of *Rome*, or his Authoritie, Ju-  
risdiction, or Powre, we repute the same  
as vayne and annichilate.

So helpe us God, all Sainctes, and the  
Holy Evangelies, Geven in our Chaptre  
Howse under owr common Seale the  
18th Day of *May*, the 29th Yere of the  
Reign of our said Sovereign Lord King  
*Henry* the Eighth.

Being then and there present,  
The Right Worshipful Mr. *Thomas Be-*  
*dyll*, Arche-deacon of *Cornewale*,  
And Master *Gwent*, Arche-deacon of  
*London*.

Witnesse in this Behalf required.

*Per me Willielmum Trafford*, Priorem.

*Per me Dominum Edmundum Sterne*,  
Vicarium.

*Per me Dominum Johannem Revell*.

*D. Bartholomæus Burgoyne*.

*Per me Thomam Cloy*.

*Per me Robertum Cardyn*.

*Per me Thomam Barnyngham*.

*Per me Johannem Boleyn*.

*Per me Willielmum Wayte*, Procurato-  
rem.

*Per me Richard Byllyngesley*.

*D. Jo-*

*D. Johannem Thomson.*

*Per me Johan. Huse.*

*Per me Everardum Diggby.*

*Per me Thomam Baker.*

*D. Johan. Nycolson.*

*Per me Willielmum Broke.*

*Per me Johannem Enys.*

*Per me Thomam Owen.*

*Robertus Howell.*

*Per me Oliverum Batmanson.*

Et Ego *Willielmus Say*, *Londinensis* Diœ-  
cesis Publicus Authoritate Regia Notarius,  
quia supra nominatorum Prioris & Conven-  
tus Juramenti Præstationi Nominumq; eo-  
rundem Subscriptioni, Sigilliq; eorum com-  
munis appensione, cæterisq; præmissis, dum  
sicut præmittitur Anno Die et Loco prædic-  
tis agerentur et fierent una cum Venerabili-  
bus Viris Testibus superius nominatis perso-  
naliter interfui, eaque sic fieri vidi, et audi-  
vi, ideo præsens Instrumentum desuper Confec-  
tum signo meo Tabellionali, ac Nomine ac  
Cognomine meis solitis et Consuetis signa-  
vi, meque hic subscripsi in Fidem et Testa-  
mentum Præmissorum rogatus et requi-  
situs.

*William Say.*



*Ad imum Signi.*

*Confide recte agis.*

*Sub Sigillo prædicti Conventus de Cera  
viridi pendenti a duplici Cauda Per  
gamenæ.*

De Renuntiantibus & Recusantibus.

Decimo octavo die Mensis *Maii*, A. D.  
1537. Regniq; Illustrissimi D. nostri Regis 29.  
in Domo capitulari Domûs Salutationis Be-  
atæ Mariæ Ordinis *Cartusiensium* juxta Ci-  
vitatem *Londinensem*, Coram Venerabili-  
bus Viris Magistris *Thoma Bedyll Cornubie*,  
& *Richardo Gwent Londoniæ* respectivè  
Archidiaconis, Illustrissimi Domini Regis  
in hac parte Commissariis, Comparue-  
runt personaliter Prior, et Conventus dictæ  
Domus, quibus declarata Causa Adventus  
Prior, et plerique de eodem Conventu  
onerati per eosdem Dominos Commissa-  
rios, spontè et voluntariè præstiterunt Ju-  
ramentum corporale ad Sancta Dei Evan-  
gelia per eos corporaliter tacta, et deoscula-  
ta, de Renunciando *Romano* Pontifici, ejus-  
que Pontificiæ Jurisdictioni, deque agnos-  
cendo, acceptando, et recipiendo Serenissi-  
mam Regiam Majestatem ut *Supremum Ca-  
put Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ*, juxta Tenorem  
Juramenti contenti in Actu Parlamenti inde  
editi

editi Anno 28. Regni dicti Domini nostri Regis.

Cui quidem Juramento Nomina sua propriis eorum manibus subscripserunt, et Sigillum eorum commune eidem apposuerunt, quorum Nomina in Instrumento desuper confecto plenius liquent; cæterum nonnulli de ipso Conventu, licet sæpius, et instanter requisiti et hortati, hujusmodi Juramentum subire contumaciter recusarent tunc ibidem. Quorum Nomina subscribuntur.

Monachi Professi.

*D. Thomas Johnson.*

*D. Richardus Bere.*

*D. Thomas Greene.*

*Johannes Davy, Referendarius.*

Conversi dictæ Domus.

*Robertus Salt.*

*Willielmus Greenwood.*

*Thomas Redyng.*

*Thomas Skryne alias Scriven,*

*Walterus Pierson.*

*Willelmus Horne.*

Ego *Willielmus Say*, Notarius Publicus, quia supra memoratis interfui, ideo me hic subscripsi.

*W. Say.*

*De-*

*Deditio Monasterii.*

Omnibus in Christo Fidelibus ad quos  
 præsens Scriptum pervenerit, et  
 quos infra Scripta tangunt, seu tangere  
 poterunt in futurum, *Willielmus Traf-*  
*ford*, Prior Monasterii sive Prioratus Salu-  
 tationis Beatae Mariæ, et ejusdem Loci  
 Conventus Ordinis *Cartusienſis* prope *Lon-*  
*doniam*, Salutem in Domino sempiternam,  
 et Fidem indubiam præsentibus adhiberi,  
 ad vestrae Universitatis Noticiam deduci-  
 mus, et deduci volumus per præsentis.  
 Quod quum plerique et major pars no-  
 strum, aliique non pauci de Conventu  
 nostro, tam vivi quam mortui, *Illustriſ-*  
*simam Regiam Majestatem* Angliæ gra-  
 viter offenderunt, atque ejus Majestatis  
 Indignationem contra nos nostrumque Pri-  
 oratum adeo provocaverunt, quod meritis  
 suis id exigentibus per Leges Regni An-  
 gliæ non solum bona mobilia et immobilia  
 juraque possessiones dicti nostri Prioratus  
 confiscari, sed et eorum vivorum Corpora  
 severissime morti adjudicari juste et legi-  
 time possent. Nos considerantes, quod  
 prudentius et melius sit nostra omnia spon-

*Ima Pars*  
*Claus.*

A. 29.  
 Hen. VIII  
 M. 29.

te, et libere in manus ac voluntatem Re-  
 giæ Clementiæ dedere & committere,  
 quam severitatem Legum tam in nos quam  
 nostra experiri, ut faciliorem gratiam et  
 veniam de commissis impetremus; et ut  
 Majestatis ejus justissima contra nos ira,  
 Legumque rigor, qui intentari posset, mi-  
 tior et tolerabilior existat; Dedimus &  
 Concessimus, ac per præsentis Damus,  
 Concedimus, Reddimus, et Deliberamus  
 Illustrissimo Principi, et Domino nostro  
*Henrico Octavo, Dei Gratia, Angliæ et*  
*Franciæ Regi, et Domino Hiberniæ, et*  
*in Terra supremo Capiti Ecclesiæ An-*  
*glicanæ, et Patrono nostro et dicti Mo-*  
 nasterii sive Prioratus dictum Monasterium  
 sive Prioratum, ac omnia et singula Ma-  
 neria, Terras, et Tenementa nostra, Pra-  
 ta, Pascua, Pasturas, Boscos, Reditus, Re-  
 versiones, Servitia, Molendina, Passagia,  
 Villanos, Wardas, Maritagia communia,  
 Libertates, Jurisdictiones, Letas, Hundre-  
 da, Visis Franchiplegii, Feria, Parca,  
 Warrenna vivaria, Mercata, Advocatio-  
 nes, Nominationes, et Præsentationes Ec-  
 clesiarum, Vicariarum, Capellarum, et ali-  
 orum Ecclesiasticorum Beneficiorum quo-  
 rumcunque Pensiones, Portiones, Annui-  
 tates, Decimas, Oblationes, Eleemosinas,

ac omnia & singula Emolumenta, Proficua,  
 Possessiones, Hæreditamenta, et Jura nostra  
 quæcunque infra Regnum *Angliae*, et  
 alibi infra Dominia dicti Domini Regis, si-  
 tuata, jacentia, seu existentia, ac omnia  
 Cartas, Evidentias, Scripta et Munimenta  
 dicto Monasterio sive Prioratui Maneriis,  
 Terris et Tenementis, ac cæteris præmissis,  
 cum Pertinentiis quoquo modo spectanti-  
 bus, sive concernentibus, ac omnia bona  
 et catalla nostra tam realia quam persona-  
 lia debita & jura nostra quæcunque ha-  
 bendum et tenendum dictum Monasteri-  
 um sive Prioratum, ac prædicta Maneria,  
 Terras & Tenementa, ac omnia & singula  
 præmissa cum suis pertinentiis præfato  
 Domino Regi, Hæredibus et Successoribus  
 suis in perpetuum. Cui in hac parte ad  
 omnem Juris effectum, qui exinde sequi  
 poterit, aut potest, nos & dictum Mona-  
 sterium sive Prioratum ac omnia Jura no-  
 bis qualitercumque ejusdem intuitu acqui-  
 sita, ut decet subjecimus, et submitti-  
 mus omnem et omnimodam plenam et  
 liberam facultatem, auctoritatem & pote-  
 statem, nos et dictum Monasterium sive  
 Prioratum, una cum omnibus & singulis  
 Maneriis, Terris, Tenementis, Redditibus,  
 Reversionibus, Servitiis, Molendinis, Passa-

' giis, Boscis, Subboscis, Pratis, Pascuis, et  
 ' Pasturis, Villanis, Wardis, Maritagiis, He-  
 ' rietis, Releviis, Communiis, Curiis Letis,  
 ' Visis Franciplegii, Hundredis, Liberta-  
 ' tibus, Jurisdictionibus, Parcis, Warrennis  
 ' vivariis, Feriis, Mercatibus, et aliis Com-  
 ' moditatibus et Emolumentis, cum suis Ju-  
 ' ribus & Pertinentiis quibuscumq; una cum  
 ' Feodis Militum Advocationibus, Nomi-  
 ' nationibus & Præsentationibus Ecclesiarum,  
 ' Vicariarum, Capellarum, Cantariarum, &  
 ' aliorum Beneficiorum quorumcunque, cum  
 ' omnibus Pensionibus, Portionibus, Annu-  
 ' itatibus, Decimis, Oblationibus, Eleemo-  
 ' sinis, et aliis Emolumentis et Possessionibus  
 ' Spiritualibus et Temporalibus, cum  
 ' omnibus Cartis, Scriptis, Evidentiis et Mu-  
 ' nimentis supradictis ad dictum nostrum Mo-  
 ' nasterium, sive Prioratum prædictum, sive  
 ' alicui Dominiorum, Maneriorum, Terrarum,  
 ' Tenementorum, Ecclesiarum sive Capella-  
 ' rum, seu alicui præmissorum quoquo modo  
 ' pertinentibus, cum omnibus et omnimodis  
 ' Bonis et Catallis nostris quibuscunque in-  
 ' fra Regnum *Angliæ*, sive alibi infra Do-  
 ' minia dicti Domini Regis existentibus ali-  
 ' enandis, ac pro suæ liberæ Regiæ volunta-  
 ' tis libito ad quoscumque sibi placuerit usus  
 ' disponendis, convertendis et transferendis  
 ' hujus-

' hujusmodi Alienationes & Dispositiones,  
 ' Conversiones et Translationes ad dictum  
 ' Dominum nostrum Regem et Patronum  
 ' ratificantes, et nos ratificamus, et raras et  
 ' gratas et perpetuo firmas habituros pro-  
 ' mittimus per præsentes. Et ut præmissa  
 ' omnia et singula suum debitum sortiri va-  
 ' leant effectum electionibus insuper nobis  
 ' et Successoribus nostris nec non omnibus  
 ' Querelis, Provocationibus, Appellationi-  
 ' bus, Actionibus, Litibus, et Instanciis aliis-  
 ' que quibuscumque nostris vel facti Reme-  
 ' diis et Beneficiis nobis forsan et Successo-  
 ' ribus nostris in ea parte prætextu Aliena-  
 ' tionis, Dispositionis, Translationis et  
 ' Conversionis prædictæ, et cæterorum præ-  
 ' missorum qualitercumque competentibus  
 ' & competituris totaliter omnibus Generali-  
 ' tatibus doli erroris metus ignorancie vel  
 ' alterius materie sive Dispositionis Excepti-  
 ' onibus, Objectionibus et Allegationibus  
 ' prorsus semotis et depositis, palam publi-  
 ' cè et expresse ex certa nostra Scientia ani-  
 ' misq; deliberatis renunciavimus et cessimus  
 ' prout per præsentes renunciamus et cedimus  
 ' et ab eisdem recedimus in his Scriptis. Et  
 ' nos prædicti Prior et Conventus, et Suc-  
 ' cessores nostri dictum Monasterium sive  
 ' Prioratum Maneria, Terras, Tenementa,

‘ ac cætera omnia et singula præmissa, cum  
 ‘ suis pertinentiis præfato Domino Regi, Hæ-  
 ‘ redibus & Successoribus suis, contra omnes  
 ‘ homines warrantizabimus in perpetuum  
 ‘ per præsentis. In cujus Rei Testimoni-  
 ‘ um Sigillum nostrum commune præsentis  
 ‘ bus apposuimus. Datum in Domu no-  
 ‘ stra dicti Monasterii sive Prioratus Capitu-  
 ‘ lari decimo die Mensis *Junii*, Anno Mille-  
 ‘ simo quingentesimo tricesimo septimo, et  
 ‘ Regni Regis prædicto vicesimo nono.

‘ Et memorandum quod die et anno  
 ‘ prædictis, prædicti Prior et Conventus co-  
 ‘ ram *Tho. Bedyll*, Clerico, in domo sua  
 ‘ Capitulari personaliter existentes recogno-  
 ‘ verunt Scriptum prædictum ac omnia con-  
 ‘ tenta in eadem forma prædicta.

The Prior and Monks who consented to  
 this Surrender had the following Yearly  
 Pensions appointed them.

|                                    |             |
|------------------------------------|-------------|
|                                    | <i>l.</i>   |
| <i>William Trafford</i> . Prior,   | 20.         |
| <i>Edm. Sterne</i> , Vicar.        | 5.          |
| <i>William Wayte</i> , Procurator. | 5.          |
| <i>Thomas Barmyngham</i> .         | 5.          |
| <i>John Enys</i> ,                 | 5.          |
| <i>Richard Trugose</i> .           | 5.          |
| <i>Thomas Baker</i> .              | 5.          |
| <i>Everard Digbye</i> .            | 5.          |
|                                    | <i>John</i> |



of Thomas Sutton Esq;

261

|                       |    |
|-----------------------|----|
| John Burdeyn.         | 5. |
| John Fox.             | 5. |
| William Brooke,       | 5. |
| Bartholomew Burgoyne. | 5. |
| John Thomson.         | 5. |
| John Bulleyn.         | 5. |
| Oliver Batmanson.     | 5. |
| John Nicolson.        | 5. |
| Maurice Chauncie.     | 5. |

Signed.

Thomas Crumwell.

The last written Monk *Maurice Chauncie*, or *Channey*, for so he wrote his Name, is very highly celebrated by Mr. *Anthony a Wood*, in his *Athenæ Oxon.* but he is very much mistaken in this Paragraph concerning him. - - - *At the Dissolution of Religious Houses by King Henry the Eighth, he with the rest of his Brethren, Eighteen in Number, being committed to Custody for denying the King's Supremacy over the Church of England, did at length with much Difficulty escape out of Prison, and so consequently Death, which all the rest suffered at several Times before the Year 1539.* For it is plain from his own Book, giving an Account of the Sufferings of Eighteen *Carthusians*, that he himself

Vol. 1st.  
Col. 202.

Passio 18  
Carthul.

Cap. 9.

was not one of them, that he actually, tho' with great Reluctance, swore the Oath prescribed, *Demum in Verba Regis juravimus, sub Conditione tamen, quatenus licitum esset*, Anno Domini 1534, 24 die *Maii*. At length we swore to the Words of the King, but under Condition however, as far as it was lawful, on the 24th of *May*, 1534. Mr. *Rymer* hath given us an Account of this Matter, and from him it is printed in this Appendix, and *Maurice Channey's* Name appears among the Subscribers, but not one Syllable of the Condition *quatenus licitum est*, nor indeed had not this Subscription been found, would it have seemed at all probable, that that Condition had been allowed, more especially, if we remember whom they had to deal with, King *Henry* the Eighth.

It is true, *Maurice Channey* doth not appear among the Subscribers of this Convent to the Oath about the Supremacy in 1537, but neither doth he appear among the Refusants; and the Reason I take to be this, That he was one of those four Monks that had been sent to two other Converts of the Order in the extream Parts of the Kingdom, two of whom were afterwards executed for the Denial of the King's Supremacy, and the  
other

other two were brought to *Sion-house* in *Middlesex*, and took the Oath there; it is plain from his own Words about it he took the Oath some where, *Infra annum postquam nos consenseramus, irritum illi fecerunt suum pactum; omnes namque nos expulerunt a Domo.* Within the Year after we consented, they broke their Words, for they turned us all out of the House. Cap. 13.

But they who had consented, had the above-mentioned Pensions allotted them, and *Maurice Chauncie* among the rest, who, whatever other good Qualities he was endowed with, had not the Gift of Perseverance under Persecution, but got him abroad beyond Sea, and returned not to *England* till the Reign of Queen *Mary*, who made him her Confessor, according to Sir *Robert* <sup>Antiq. Hertf p.</sup> *Chauncie* his Kinsman. On that Queen's Death he went abroad again, and settling at *Bruges*, became Prior over some other of his Brethren, and from him, according to *Antony a Wood*, do our English Carthusians beyond the Sea at Newport in Flanders derive their Succession in the said House near London to this Day. 51.





T H E

## I N D E X.

A

**A** Bbot *George*, Archbp. of *Cant.* one of the first Governours of the Hospital, p. 46. one of the Overseers of Mr. *Sutton's* Will, p. 101. at Mr. *Sutton's* Funeral, p. 111. his Letter about *Berwick-bridge*, p. 118.

*Altham*, Sir *James*, chosen a Governor, p. 112.

*Andrews*, *Lancelot*, Bp. of *Ely*, one of the first Gov. of the Hospital, p. 46. one of the Overseers of Mr. *Sutton's* Will, p. 101. at Mr. *Sutton's* Funeral, p. 111. joins in the Letter about *Berwick-bridge*, p. 118.

B. *Bacon*,

## B.

- Bacon*, Sir *Francis*, his Letter to K. *James* about Mr. *Sutton's* Foundation, p. 132.
- Bagley*, *Henry*, first Usher of the School, p. 160.
- Balsham* in *Cambridgeshire*, Mr. *Sutton's* Charity to his poor Neighbours there, p. 16.
- Baxter*, *Simon*, Esq; the Legacy bequeathed him by Mr. *Sutton*, p. 83. lays Claim to the Estates of the Hospital, petitions the King for Justice, p. 123. commences a Suit at Law, p. 125. loseth the Cause, p. 127. petitions for his Legacy, acknowledges himself seduced by wicked Counsel, p. 129. receives it, p. 130. very ungrateful, having inherited Lands from Mr. *Sutton* to the Value of 9300 *l.* squanders them away, p. 131.
- Bedyll*, *Tho.* one of the Visitors of the Monastery, his Letter about the *Carthusians*, p. 193.
- Berwick*, Mr. *Sutton's* Legacy to it, p. 80. the Bridge over the *Tweed* built out of his Estate, p. 117.
- Beverly*, a Town in *Yorkshire*, Mr. *Sutton's* Legacy to it, p. 99.
- Byrde*, *Wm.* LL.D. chosen a Gov. p. 159.
- Brown*, *Tho.* one of the first Gov. p. 46.
- C. *Cam-*

## C.

- Camden, Wm.* Clarencieux King at Arms,  
orders Mr. *Sutton's* Funeral, his Certificate, p. 114.
- Castle-Camps*, purchased by Mr. *Sutton*, the  
Tenor of that noble Manor, p. 15.
- Cecil, Robert, E. of Salisbury*, wrote to by  
Mr. *Sutton*, p. 20. a Gov. p. 46.
- Cox, Richard*, Præceptor to K. *Edw. VI.*  
adviseeth the sending Mr. *Sutton* to *Eaton*  
School, p. 3.
- Coke, Sir Edward*, one of the first Gov. p.  
46. at the Funeral, p. 111. defends the  
legal Settlement of the Hospital, p. 127.  
his Character of it, p. 204.
- Crook, Sir John*, Mr. *Sutton* declares his  
last Will before him, p. 73.

## D.

- Dudley, John*, of *Newington*, Esq; his  
Widow married to Mr. *Sutton*, p. 9.
- Dudley, Ann*, his Daughter, married by Mr.  
*Sutton* to *Francis Popham*, Esq; p. 12.  
presented a Jewel by Q. *Eliz.* p. 14.
- Dudley, Ambrose, E. of Warwick*, makes  
Mr. *Sutton* his Secretary, p. 5. grants  
him an Annuity for Life, makes him  
Master of the Ordnance at *Berwick*, p.  
6. in Conjunction with his Brother the  
Earl

Earl of *Leicester* obtains for Mr. *Sutton* from Q. *Eliz.* the honorable Post of Master General of the Ordnance in the North for Life,

p. 7.

## E.

K. *Edward* III. goes over to *Calais*, his gallant Behaviour there, p. 188. highly rewards Sir *Walter de Manny*, honors his Funeral at *Charter-house* with his Presence,

p. 190.

Q. *Elizabeth* keeps her Court at *Charter-house*,

p. 201.

*Egerton*, Sir *Tho.* afterwards Lord *Ellesmere*, a Trustee in Mr. *Sutton's* Deed of Gift for an Hospital, p. 13. one of the first Governors, p. 46. at his Funeral, p.

111.

## F.

*Fenner*, Cap. *James*, the first Pensioner,

p. 157.

*Fish*, Dr. presented by Mr. *Sutton* to the Rectory of *Hallingbury Bouchers*, Mr. *Sutton's* memorable Speech to him, p. 35.

*Foster*, Sir *Thomas*, one of the first Governors,

p. 46.

## G.

*Gardiner*, *John*, of *Grove-Place*, Esq; Father to Mr. *Sutton's* Wife,

p. 9.

*Grey*,



*Grey, Nicholas*, first School-master, p. 160.

## H.

- Hackney*, Mr. *Sutton* dies there, p. 74. his  
Bowels buried there, p. 111. his Legacy  
to the Poor there, p. 105.
- Hall, Joseph*, Bp. of *Norwich*, his Letter  
to Mr. *Sutton*, p. 26.
- Harrington*, Sir *John*, tells K. *James* Mr.  
*Sutton* designed to make the D. of *York*  
his Heir, p. 20. his Letter to Mr. *Sutton*  
to justify himself, p. 23.
- Herbert, Wm. E.* of *Pembroke*, chosen a  
Governor, p. 159.
- Hayward, Tho.* first Register of the Hospi-  
tal, p. 112.
- Hobart*, Sir *Henry*, one of the 1st Gov. p.  
46. at the Funeral, p. 111.
- Howard, Thomas*, D. of *Norfolk*, retains  
Mr. *Sutton*, p. 5. buys *Charter-house* of  
Lord *North*, Papers found in *Charter-*  
*house* fatal to him, p. 202.
- Howard, Tho. E.* of *Suffolke*, sells *Charter-*  
*house* to Mr. *Sutton*, p. 36. a Legatee in  
his last Will, p. 106. at his Funeral, p. 111.
- Howard, Henry*, E. of *Northampton*, cho-  
sen a Gov. at Mr. *Sutton's* Funeral, p. 112.
- Howgton, John*, Prior of the Monastery, ex-  
ecuted for High Treason, p. 192.
- Hutton*,

*Hutton, John*, Vicar of *Littlebury*, made Master of the Hospital by Mr. *Sutton*, p. 73. resigns, p. 159.

## I.

King *James* I. grants Mr. *Sutton* Letters Patents to found an Hospital at *Charter-house*, and honors it with his own Name, p. 36. keeps his Court at *Charter-house*, p. 203.

*Jesus* College in *Cambridge*, left a Legacy by Mr. *Sutton*, p. 114.

## K.

King, *John*, Bp. of *London*, one of the first Gov. p. 46. at Mr. *Sutton's* Funeral, p. 111. desired to chuse a School-master and Usher, p. 159.

## L.

*Lanier, James*, the first Scholar of the Foundation, p. 159.

*Law, John*, one of the first Gov. p. 46. one of Mr. *Sutton's* Executors, p. 101.

*Lincoln* City, a Legacy left to it by Mr. *Sutton*, p. 99. his Picture in their great Hall, p. 115.

*London* City, a Legacy left to it by Mr. *Sutton*, p. 99.

## M.

*Magdalene* College in *Cambridge*, left a Legacy by Mr. *Sutton*, p. 114.

*Manny*,

*Manny, Sir Walter*, gives a Piece of Ground of 13 Acres and a Rod, near *Smithfield*, for a Burial-place in Time of a Pestilence, p. 162. founds in Conjunction with *Michael de Northburgh* a Monastery of *Carthusians* there, p. 165. buried in the midst of the Choir there, p. 190.

*Mocket, John*, first Steward of the Hospital, p. 157.

*Mountaigne, George*, Dean of *Westminster*, one of the first Gov. p. 46. at the Funeral, p. 111.

## N.

*Normandy, John* Duke of, a noble Saying of him being K. of *France*, p. 185.

*Newington, Stoke*, in *Middlesex*, Mr. *Sutton* has the Moiety of the Manor by Marriage, p. 9. buries his Wife there, p. 17. his Legacy to it, p. 80.

*Nightingale, Jeffery*, Esq; one of the 1st Gov. p. 46.

*North, Sir Edward*, has a Grant of *Charter-house*, p. 198. in a terrible Fright about it, p. 199.

*North, Roger* Lord, sells *Charter-house* to the D. of *Norfolk*, p. 202.

*Northburgh, Michael*, Bp. of *London*, bequeaths in his last Will 2000 *l. &c.* to found

found a Monastery of *Carthusians* on the  
Burial Ground he had purchased of Sir  
*Walter de Manny*, p. 183.

## O.

*Overal, John*, Dean of *St. Paul's*, one of the  
1st Gov. p. 46. at Mr. *Sutton's* Funeral,  
p. 111.

*Ostend*, a Town in the *Netherlands*, Mr.  
*Sutton's* Legacy to it, p. 84.

## P.

*Perne, Andrew*, D.D. Master of *Peter-*  
*house*, a Friend of Mr. *Sutton*, p. 14.

*Perne, Andrew*, A. M. chosen Master of  
the Hospital, p. 159.

*Peterhouse* College in *Cambridge*, Mr. *Sut-*  
*ton* a Benefactor to it, p. 15.

*Popham, Sir John*, married his eldest Son to  
Mr. *Sutton's* Daughter in Law, p. 12. a  
Trustee in Mr. *Sutton's* Deed of Gift for an  
Hospital at *Hallingbury Bouchers*, p. 13.  
--- his eldest Son Sir *Francis*, his Lady and  
Children, Legatees in Mr. *Sutton's* last  
Will, p. 89, 90.

## R.

*Raven, John*, Richmond Herald, attends  
Mr. *Sutton's* Funeral, p. 114.  
*Ribean-*

*Ribeaumont*, Sir *Eustace*, a most valiant  
French Knight, his *Eulogium* by K. *Ed-*  
*ward* III. p. 189.

S.

*Smith*, *Francis*, first Receiver of the Reve-  
nues of the Hospital, p.

*Stapleton*, Sir *Bryan*, Knight of the Garter  
in the Time of *Richard* II. p. 2.

*Stapleton*, Sir *Miles*, one of the Founders of  
that noble Order of the same Family, p. 2.

*Stapleton*, Sir *Miles*, one of the Knights of  
the Shire of the County of *York* in the  
present Parl. of the same Family, p. 2.

*Sutton*, *Eliz.* Mother of Mr. *Sutton*, a Daugh-  
ter of the Hon. Family of the *Stapleton*'s. p. 2.

*Sutton*, *Eliz.* Wife of Mr. *Sutton*, Widow  
of *John Dudley* of *Newington*, Esq;  
Daughter of *John Gardiner* of *Grove-*  
*place* in *Buckinghamshire*, Esq; p. 9. her  
Daughter by Mr. *Dudley* married to  
*Francis Popham*, Esq; p. 12. dies, p. 16.  
her Character, p. 17.

*Sutton*, *Rich.* Gent. Steward of the Courts  
to the City of *Lincoln*, Father of Mr. *Sut-*  
*ton*, p. 2. his last Will, p. 209.

*Sutton*, *Richard*, Esq; one of the first Gov.  
p. 46. one of Mr. *Sutton*'s Executors, p. 101.

The *I N D E X.*

*Sutton, Thomas*, Esq; Founder of the Hospital, born a Gent. p. 1. put to *Eaton-School*, of St. *John's Coll.* in *Cambridge*, p. 3. a Student of *Lincoln's-Inn*, travels abroad, on his Return home administers to his Father's Will, p. 4. retained by the D. of *Norfolk*, becomes Secretary to the E. of *Warwick*, p. 5. has a Grant of an Annuity for Life from him, made Master of the Ordnance at *Berwick*, made Master General of the Ordnance in the North for Life, p. 6. commands a Battery at the Siege of *Edinburgh Castle*, it surrenders, p. 7. grows rich by a Lease of Coal-mines, p. 8. returns to *London*, marries, takes a large House near *Broken Wharfe*, p. 9. becomes a Merchant, and his Riches greatly increase, one of the Victuallers of the Navy, p. 10. a Commissioner for Prizes, takes a rich *Spanish Prize*, retires from Business, p. 12. resigns his Post of Master Gen. of the Ordnance in the North, makes a Deed of Gift to found a Hospital at *Hallingbury Bouchers* in *Essex*, makes his Will, bequeaths 2000 *l.* to *Q. Eliz.* p. 13. supplies his poor Neighbours with Corn in a great Dearth, loseth his Wife, p. 16. is afraid of being made a Lord, writes to *Ld. Chancellor Ellesmere* and *Ld. Treasurer*

*Salisbury* to prevent it, p. 20. receives an excellent Letter from Mr. *Hall*, afterwards Bp. of *Norwich*, about Charity, p. 26. obtains an Act of Parliament to found an Hospital at *Hallingbury Bouchers*, p. 34. his worthy Speech to Dr. *Fish* on presenting him to the Rectory, p. 35. purchaseth *Charter-house*, and obtains Letters Patents to found the Hospital there, p. 36. names the first Master, makes his last Will, p. 73. dies, the Description of his Person, p. 74. the Particulars of his great Estate, p. 75, 76. his Character, p. 205, 206, 207.

## T.

*Thoresby, Henry*, Esq; one of the first Gov. p. 46. Mr. *Sutton* declares his last Will before him, p. 73.

*Trafford, Wm.* Prior of *Charter-house*, his Character, p. 194. surrenders his House, has a Pension of 20 l. *per Annum*, p. 198.

## W.

*Walsingham, Sir Francis*, discovers the Design of the *Spanish* Invasion, p. 10. prevents it a Year by Bills on the Bank of *Genoa*, thought to be assisted therein by Mr. *Sutton*. p. 11.

*Wotton, John*, first Auditor of the Hospital, p. 157.

## ERRATA.

*Hæc inter alia sic corrigat Lector bene-  
volus. Pag. 90. lin. 18. pro Francis l.  
Frances. p. 93. lin. 12. pro Acquaintance, l.  
Acquittance. p. 134, lin. 4. pro Mediation,  
l. Meditation. p. 150. lin. penult. dele Inter-  
rogation Point. p. 174. lin. 19. pro la voca-  
tam, l. vocatam la. p. 180. lin. 8. pro men-  
tis, l. mentio. p. 193. lin. 13. pro 1539.  
l. 1537. p. 201. lin. 14. post towards adde  
the. lin. ult. pro or, l. for.*













